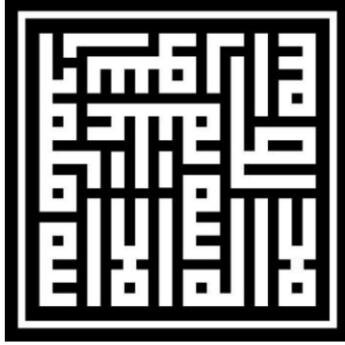




AHMED HULUSI

SPIRIT
MAN
JINN





SPIRIT MAN JINN

AHMED HULUSI



www.ahmedhulusi.org

Our communication with everyone is according to the level of his or her understanding.

AHMED HULUSI

3

If you are not able to reach the ripeness of having a perceiving mind, then try to refrain from the primitiveness of DENIAL.

AHMED HULUSI

If you ever wonder about the sort of life forms which are outside your COCOON and the way in which you communicate with them, please continue reading.

AHMED HULUSI

“Only ‘IBLEES’ (the Satan) did not prostrate himself, because he was one of the JINN.”

(The Koran, 18:50)

“*Allah* has cursed the Satan! And the Satan said, ‘I shall take a portion of your servants to make a community of my own. I shall mislead them; I shall create in them false desires and fool them by giving them false suppositions.

Whoever leaves *Allah* and chooses the Satan as a friend and guardian will definitely suffer a loss and disappointment!

The Satan makes them promises, stirs in them false desires, and fools them; and the Satan’s promises are only deception.”

(The Koran, 4:118-120)

Auzu-Billahi Minash-Shaitan Nir-Rajim
Bismillahir Rahman'ir Rahiym

**I seek refuge in *Allah* from the accursed Satan
In the name of *Allah*, Most Gracious, Most Merciful**

5

**“HAVING A QUESTIONING MIND IS HALF WAY TO
ACQUIRING KNOWLEDGE.”**

Hz. Mohammed (a.s)

**Rabbi anniy massaniyyash shaiytanu binusbiyn wa
adhaba. Rabbi auwzu biqa min hamasatish
shaiyateyney wa auwzu biqa rabbi an yakhdhurun.
Wa hifzan min kulli shaiytanin maarid.**

(The Koran, 38:41; 23:97-98, 37:7)

CONTENTS

TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE-----	12
IMPORTANT NOTICE ABOUT THE FOURTH EDITION----	18
ABOUT THE FIFTH EDITION-----	28
STARTING FROM THE HUMAN BODY -----	34
THE ANGELS-----	40
PREFACE TO THE EIGHTH EDITION -----	46
PREFACE FOR THE TENTH EDITION -----	48
THE RELIGION AND SCIENCE -----	50
THE HUMAN BEING WHO IS INCAPABLE OF PERCEIVING THE TV WAVES BY HIS FIVE SENSES! -----	54
THE UNIVERSE MADE UP OF LIGHT RAYS AND THE ASSUMED MULTIPLICITY-----	64
WHAT IS THE 'SPIRIT'?-----	74
THE HUMAN SPIRIT -----	84
THE STRUCTURE OF THE 'HUMAN' AND ITS CHARACTERISTICS -----	102

	THE STRUCTURE AND THE CHARACTERISTICS OF THE JINNS-----	120
	THE SCIENTIFIC EXPLANATION OF WHY THE LIVES OF THE JINNS ARE SO LONG; AND THEY HAVE VERY SHORT LIVES -----	126
	'JINNS' ACCORDING TO KORAN AND HADITHS -----	130
	THE EXPLANATION OF THE VERSES-----	136
	SOME HADITHS ABOUT THE JINNS -----	142
7	THE CONCLUSIONS DRAWN FROM THE HADITHS-----	146
	THE OPINIONS OF SOME ISLAMIC SCHOLARS -----	148
	THE STATE OF THE MUSLIMS WHO DENY THE JINNS-	152
	THE DECEPTION AND THE DOMINATION METHODS OF THE JINNS-----	156
	HOW DO JINNS ESTABLISH CONTACT BY INTRODUCING THEMSELVES-----	160
	JINNS DOMINATING HUMAN BEINGS WITHOUT MAKING THEM AWARE -----	172
	AHMAD QADIANI, THE PROMISED MESSIAH AND THE JESUS OF THE LAST ERA -----	180
	MAHDI AND MAHDISM-----	186

WHY HAVE THE NUMBER OF THE MAHDIS INCREASED -----194

WHY SOME OF THE SAINTS ARE THOUGHT TO BE THE 'MAHDI'? -----200

THE JINNS CHANNELLING HUMANS BY USING VARIOUS TITLES (THROUGH ISLAMIC WAY)-----202

HOW DO THE JINNS RULE THE PEOPLE BY THE STORY OF SPIRITUALISM -----212

ABOUT THE ANTICHRIST AND THE ANTICHRISTHOOD 216

DEALING WITH THE JINNS AND WITCHCRAFT -----222

THE EFFECT OF RECITING PRAYERS ON THE JINNS-----234

THE TRICKERY OF REINCARNATION (TANASUKH) -----238

THE EXPLANATION OF THESE VERSES-----244

OUR SUBJECT IS THE 'ALIENS'-----264

NO SCIENTIST EVER EXIST ON THE SUBJECT OF THE ALIENS-----268

OUR CONCLUDING WORDS ABOUT THIS BOOK -----284

 SUPPLEMENTARY SECTION ----- 292

INNER FACE OF ALIENS ----- 292

THE TRUTH BEHIND THE EXTRATERRESTRIALS -----294

IS THERE REALLY A CONVERSATION GOING ON? WHO
ARE BEING SPOKEN TO?----- 296

WHO ARE THE BEINGS THAT ARE CONTACTED THROUGH
THE MEDIUMS? WHAT ARE THEIR CHARACTERISTICS?
----- 304

WHY ARE THEY HIDING THE FACT THAT THEY ARE JINNS!
----- 308

THE WAY JINNS DESCRIBE THEMSELVES IN THEIR OWN
WORDS----- 312

9 THE GREATEST DECEPTION OF THE JINNS – THE ALIENS
----- 318

MOHAMMAD IS NOT THE MESSENGER OF ALLAH!--- 322

MOHAMMAD MUSTAFA AND MUSTAFA KEMAL ARE
EXTRA-TERRESTRIALS (THEY ARE JINNS) ----- 324

THE DOOMSDAY HAS COME! ----- 326

GODS, GODS AND GODS...LORDS, LORDS AND LORDS...
----- 328

FOUR MAIN CHARACTERISTICS THAT DESCRIBE THE
JINNS----- 332

ADDRESSING EACH NATION IN ACCORDANCE WITH
THEIR OWN FAITH----- 338

SATAN IS THE PROTECTOR!----- 346

HERE’S A SUPERB EXAMPLE OF AN ACT OF DEVILTRY 348

THE EMBODIED GODS OF ALIENS (JINNS)-----352

UFOS AND FLYING SAUCERS -----360

DECEPTIONS AND DECEPTIONS... WHAT IF YOU ARE
BEING FOOLED! -----362

A PLACE WHERE FREEDOM OF EXPRESSION DOES NOT
EXIST AND ALL DISCUSSIONS ARE FORBIDDEN!!! -----376

REINCARNATION (TANASUKH) - A HINDU PHILOSOPHY 378

THE REALITY OF DEATH -----382

ALIEN DECEPTION -----392

MESSAGES FROM UFOS-----394

WHAT NEEDS TO BE DONE TO BE PROTECTED -----400

SUPPLICATION FOR PROTECTION-----404

GLOSSARY OF TERMS-----406

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN



TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE

Dear Readers,

SPIRIT MAN JINN is the translation of the book called '**RUH INSAN CIN**', which is written in Turkish Language by the Master *Ahmed Hulusi*, who is a distinguished character in the field of Sufism. This prolific author produced a vast number of literary works dealing with the deepest and most fundamental questions concerning religion in general and Islam in particular. Besides such topics, *Ahmed Hulusi* has also explained in his writings the nature of his own mission and the position he claimed to hold in Islam. In this book, he refers to the nature of the **SPIRITS, MEN** and the **JINNS**.

12

To understand the subject matter of the book, some background knowledge is necessary. To fulfil this need, an introductory note is provided below. Readers will benefit from a perusal of that note before commencing a study of the main book itself.

Throughout history man has always had a deep attraction for the supernatural and the unseen. The existence of a world parallel to our own has always fascinated people. This world is commonly referred to as the spirit world, and almost every set of people have some concept of one. With some people,

these spirits are no more than the souls of dead people or ghosts. With others, spirits are either the forces of good or the forces of evil; both battling against one another to gain influence over humanity. However, both of these explanations are more in tune with folk tales and fantasy. The true explanation of such a world comes from Islam. Like every other way, Islam also claims to explain this realm of the unseen.

13

The **JINN** are beings living on earth in a world parallel to mankind. The Arabic word Jinn is derived from the verb '**JANNA**', which means to hide or conceal. Thus, they are physically invisible from man as their description suggests. This invisibility is one of the reasons why some people have denied their existence. The origins of the **JINN** can be traced from the Koran as well as from the teachings and practices of Prophet Mohammad (Peace and blessings be upon him). *Allah* says:

"Indeed, we created man from dried clay of black smooth mud. And we created the **JINN** before that from the smokeless flame of fire". (Chapter: Al-Hijr -Verses: 26-27).

In many aspects of their world, the **JINN** are very similar to us. They eat and drink, they marry, have children and they die. Their life span however, is far greater than ours. Like us, they will also be subject to a Final Reckoning by *Allah*. They will be present with mankind on the Day of Judgement and will either go to Paradise or Hell.

One of the powers of the **JINNS** is that they are able to take on any physical form they like. Thus, they can appear as anything they like. Over the last few years the interest in the subject of aliens and UFO's has become heightened. Many TV

programmes have increased the popularity of the theory that aliens exist. Thousands of people have sighted strange looking creatures all over the world. These sightings however, have still not proven substantially that aliens exist. It seems more plausible all the sightings of such creatures were just **JINNS** parading in different forms.

If a person does become possessed, then the name of *Allah* has to be used in expelling the **JINN**. If we look at the practice of the Prophet and his companions, we find many **Duas** (Supplications) to exorcise the **JINN**. All these **Duas** invoke *Allah* to help the possessed person.

Through their powers of flying and invisibility, the **JINNS** are the chief component in occult activities. Therefore, Voodoo, Black magic, Witchcraft and Mediums can all be explained through the world of the **JINNS**. Likewise, so can the illusions and feats of magicians. Because the **JINN** can traverse huge distances over a matter of seconds, their value to magicians is great. In our day, some of the feats performed by magicians and entertainers are without doubt from the assistance of the **JINN**.

14

One of the most frequent activities associated with the **JINN** is fortune telling. Before the advent of the Prophet Mohammad (Peace and blessings be upon him) fortune-tellers and soothsayers were wide spread. These people would use their associates from the **JINN** to find out about the future. Furthermore, the onslaught of satanic visions has also hit the Muslims. Many Muslims claim to have seen visions of the Prophet Mohammed (Peace and blessings be upon him) and even *Allah!* By doing this, Satan is able to lead astray the weak Muslims. Through such visions, Muslims are often told that the commands of Islam are not applicable to

them. The **JINNS** tell them that Prayer, Fasting, Pilgrimage to Mecca etc. are not obligatory for them. It is a great deception and unfortunately one which has been very effective.

In this book, you will be able to find some fascinating facts relating to the **JINNS, SPIRITS** and the origin of the **MAN**, which are all discovered by Master Ahmed Hulusi himself in a research to find the truth and the answers to these entire phenomenon.

The translation of the book is carried out by adhering to the following points.

- 15 1) For the translation of the verses of the Koran, I have relied heavily on several translations particularly Yusuf Ali's meaning of the Glorious Koran and certain changes have been made in the wording, spelling, and punctuation of that translation. I am well aware of the difficulties in translating the Koran into English that the Koran simply cannot be translated. So, in order to choose the best possible language, every effort has been made. However, the result is of course not the glorious Koran. It can never take the place of the Koran in Arabic, nor is it meant to do so.
- 2) The reader will notice that throughout this book many quotations stand without source notes. These quotations are almost exclusively part of Arabic oral tradition-sayings of the Prophet Mohammad, events in his life, reports and parables of famous Islamic scholars and writers.
- 3) In the interest of correct pronunciation, the linguistically preferred transliterations of Arabic names and words have been adopted rather than generally accepted English usage. Exceptions have been made in cases where the English pronunciation accords with the preferred transliteration, as

Mecca (instead of Makka), Koran (instead of Qur'an), and the like.

4) To make the subject matter easier for those who are familiar with Arabic, I have included Arabic terms along with their English versions in the actual text. I have also put all these words and the explanatory phrases at the end of the book under a section called "Glossary of Terms" so that the reader may refer to them easily.

5) For every quotation from the Koran, I have added within parentheses the reference according to modern usage, the chapter name, followed by a colon and then the verse numbers.

6) Please also note that throughout the entire book, the word "He" is used to refer to the "**ESSENCE OF ALLAH**", namely the "**HU**". **It is not used to refer to a third person as in English Language.** Indeed, in this sense the term has no gender nor can it be made plural. This shows its uniqueness when compared with the word "God", which can be made plural, i.e., Gods; or feminine, i.e., Goddess. Similarly, the words "Him" and "His" are also capitalized for the same reason.

Finally, I would like to say that I am very grateful to the editor for his kind cooperation in making this translation possible. I also like to point out that I am not a scholar of the Arabic language and therefore I welcome comments on my weaknesses in the translation as I am open to any suggestions for improvements.

The writings of *Ahmed Hulusi* are great classic works and therefore I have tried to make the translation as close and faithful as possible to the original text. Indeed, I faced many troubles analysing and trying to understand the complex

philosophical terms in order to proceed with my translation. Knowing the difficulty involved, I have therefore used simple words while constructing the sentences. When some words did not have corresponding English versions, sometimes, I added simplified explanatory phrases and used them instead.

I strongly feel that this book will be of much interest and advantage to the increasing number of Muslims now turning directly to the Koran as the final and binding authority over all the other sources of Islam.

* * *



IMPORTANT NOTICE ABOUT THE FOURTH EDITION

My Dear Readers,

18

Soon after publishing the first edition of our book in 1972, the second in 1974 and the third in 1986, we have delayed the fourth edition despite many requests.

The reason for this delay was the fact that during our research and studies, which we have carried out after that time, we have found out that we observed more detailed facts regarding the subject. It was essential that we needed to add even more new chapters to the book. However, as the time went by, we saw that each of these new chapters were at such complexity that they could be the subject of another different book. For this reason, we have started to prepare this new book and postponed the publication of the previous version, which now you hold in your hands. Later on, our friends have requested that this book should be published immediately without any further delay. Therefore, we have decided to present you this fourth edition.

* * *

Let us talk briefly about the events concerning 'channelling spirits' and 'meeting with the extraterrestrial beings', namely the aliens, which in this day and age is a very popular subject.

It is a fact that the views relating to the spirit, which started out as 'communicating with the spirits of the dead people' or 'communicating with life forms that do not have physical body' has taken the form of 'communicating with beings who live at so and so stars in the space' and expanded quite rapidly. All of these assumptions are purely based on the 'DECEPTIONS OF THE JINNS'.

19

Those who are involved with this subject do not take the warnings of Hz. Mohammad as well as the *Koran-al Karim* into account. They simply make comments on the verses according to their assumptions and never pay attention to the **hadiths** (sayings) of Hz. Mohammad.

While making comments on a particular verse according to their understandings, they are also denying many other verses as well. However, all religious scholars agree totally on the following point.

The *Koran-al Karim* can be considered as a complete whole and it is either accepted as a whole or not. If one of the verses is not accepted, this means that the whole is not accepted. However, they make their own comments in order to suit their purposes and at the same time totally deny some of the other verses.

In order to explain that coming back to the world in a new body is absolutely impossible for the spirits, let us give the following translations from the chapter of Al-Mumenuon (The Believers), verses 99-100-101.

‘FINALLY WHEN DEATH COMES TO EACH OF THEM THEY SAY:

O MY LORD SEND ME BACK (to the world)...SO THAT I MAY DO THE RIGHT IN THAT WHICH I HAVE LEFT BEHIND AND MAKE USE OF MY LIFE WHICH I’VE SPENT FOR NOTHING!

BY NO MEANS! WHAT THEY SAY WILL NEVER COME TRUE!

BEHIND THEM IS A BARRIER, THE UNIVERSE OF GRAVES UNTIL THE DAY THEY’LL BE RAISED (the resurrection day where they will be raised again)...SO, WHEN THE TRUMPET IS BLOWN, THERE SHALL BE NO TIES OF RELATIONSHIPS (the blood relations, the family ties) BETWEEN THEM ON THAT DAY, NOR WILL THEY ASK FOR ANOTHER!’

20

Apart from these, in some other parts of Koran, there are also some verses, which have the following meaning:

‘We wish we could go back to the world and do the things, which we had to do, but neglected of doing. However, they can never go back to the world soon after they have tasted death’.

Yes, in order to deceive the mankind, one of the best methods exercised by the Spirits; or in other words the beings without a body or the Aliens is the information that they pass onto them about the fact that they will be coming back to the world once again after they passed away. Whoever believes in this would certainly be rejecting the belief system of Islam.

Because, the *Koran-al Karim* and Hz. Mohammad *Aleyhesselaam* (Peace and blessings be upon him) have surely informed us that the human beings will never be able to return to the world ever again in a physical body after they

die until the resurrection day (Ba'su ba'd-al-Mawt). This is one of the main principles of rules of faith.

For these so called beings described as 'JINNS', the 128th verse of the chapter 6 in Koran is very important.

It is such that:

The expression: "YOU! THE JINN COMMUNITY, YOU HAVE TAKEN THE MAJORITY OF THE HUMANS UNDER YOUR DOMINATION." simply proves that majority of the humans make their decisions consciously or unconsciously under the dominance of the 'JINNS' who disguise themselves under various definitions, which in return proves that the humans are obsessed by false ideas. The verse continues as follows:

21

"THEIR ADHERENTS AMONG THE HUMANS SAY: 'OUR LORD, WE HAVE BENEFITED FROM EACH OTHER AND WE HAVE REACHED THE TIME THAT HAS BEEN ORDAINED FOR US.

THEN ALLAH (declares): THE FIRE IS YOUR DWELLING PLACE! YOU WILL DWELL IN IT FOREVER EXCEPT THOSE THAT ALLAH WILLS!"

* * *

Why do the **JINNS** take the majority of people under their possession and cause them to go astray?

The reason is that, they show them the events, which are going to take place in the future in a way that is different than what the prophets have informed before, causing deviations.

Because these people cannot be aware of what they will face with in the life beyond death, they cannot realize that they should take the necessary precautions. They keep on

spending their lives by going after the wrong objectives and dealing with useless things. They understand the whole truth when they die, but this time, there is nothing they can do!

Let us always take into account the following.

1. Like humans, the **JINNS** live in large communities and families as well. Their population is at least ten times more than that of the humans. There are billions and billions of them.

2. They have an 'Astral' body, in other words 'A kind of hologramic body of light'. They can send signals of light to the brains of the humans and impose them with various ideas. They can manipulate the imaginative faculties of the humans and by doing so they show them the things that do not exist at all as if they were really existed. They give them fear and create anxieties in their minds.

22

3. They have the power to burn the matter by means of light rays and also there are some among them who have the power to carry an object from one place in the world to another place in an instant.

4. They impose upon people who do not accept the religion of Islam, the various philosophies from the past as if they were the latest new ideas.

5. Among the people who have good knowledge on Islamic way of thinking, it is impossible to assume a single person who believes that communicating with the spirits through the mediums is possible.

6. The western world who believes in the spirits does not know anything about the **JINNS**! In Christianity, there is no subject relating to the JINN! For this reason, with respect to

their influences, they give different names to those beings, which we call as 'JINN' and they name them as 'spirit, fairy, goblin, ghost or demon'. However, all of these described by the above mentioned names or with similar qualities are in fact the beings, which are named as **JINNS**.

7. According to the spiritualists who say that they can get in touch with the aliens, Hz. Mohammad is a simple medium who can foresee the future! It is the **JINNS** who impose on them with such ideas.

8. Nowadays, there are lots of famous men and women who think that they are saints, who do not know anything about Islam and therefore float in their imaginary worlds. They are the poor beings who have been possessed by the **JINNS** without knowing. The reason behind this is mere ignorance.

9. Within the framework of the memory in general, the **JINNS** can interpret all kinds of events pertaining to the past and can express them through the mouth of anyone.

Therefore, a person in a state of trance can experience the past events, however, this does not mean that he is living in the past at that very moment; or if that person speaks a foreign language at that moment, it does not mean that he has been in those places before where that language was spoken.

Here, let us try to give an answer to a most frequently asked question as much as our experience would allow. What sort of precautions an individual who has been possessed or influenced by the **JINNS** either consciously or without knowing should take, so that he can benefit from these in the long run?

We can list our suggestions in this respect as follows:

1. The following prayer, which is being taught in the Chapter of Sad (The Letter Sad)-Verse 41, Chapter of Mumenoon (The Believers)- Verses 97 and 98, and the Chapter of Saffat (Those who set the Ranks, drawn up in the ranks)-Verse 7 is said to abolish the effect of the **JINNS** over the individuals to a great extent.

It is suggested that those who are interested in practicing Sufism should read these verses 40 times every morning and evening as a precaution.

If those people who have a special problem continues to recite this prayer every morning and evening between 100 and 300 times, I would hope that they can get the result in a very short time.

24

It will be read as follows:

‘Rabbi anniy massaniyyash shaiytanu binusbiyn wa adhaba. Rabbi auwzu biqa min hamasatish shaiyateyney wa auwzu biqa rabbi an yakhdurun. Wa khifzan min kulli shaiytanin marid’

‘The Satan has afflicted me with distress and suffering! My Lord! I seek refuge in Thee from suggestions of the evil ones. And I seek refuge in Thee, my Lord, lest they be present with me. And (there is) a safeguard against every rebellious Satan’.

2. Read 41 times each, the verses starting with the word ‘Qul Auzu’ (Say: I seek refuge with the Lord of the Dawn) and Chapter 113-Al-Falaq (The Daybreak, dawn) and the Chapter 114 An-Nas (Mankind).

3. La hawla wa la quwwata illa billahil aliyiyil aziym.

(There is no power and strength except with *Allah*, The Grand, and The Great)

(This can be repeated between 100 and 500 times every day).

* * *

Finally, let us comment further as follows.

In general, behind all the disasters that people have to face with, there lies his ignorance. At the end of each event like this, the following word is the most repeated word:

- But, I HAD THOUGHT THAT it was so! I had heard that it was so!

25

If you build up your life in accordance with knowledge, but not according to rumours or suppositions, you will never be regretful in the life beyond death! Everyday, thousands of us taste the death and go on to live their life in a kind of universe where it is impossible to gain anything new.

Therefore, the main issue is to save our eternal lives, which is what we have to do without any delay.

What we must save in the first place is our own future! The life style beyond death however is very much different than the life style that we think we are familiar with and the life that we have been accustomed to!

Let us have the knowledge! Let us research about the life beyond death from the valid books, but not from so and so individuals. In this way, we would not suffer from excessive sorrow in any way on the days where repentance will be absolutely useless.

IF YOU BELIEVE IN THE REALITY OF LIFE BEYOND DEATH;

THEN, HOW MUCH OF YOUR DAY ARE YOU SPENDING ON THINGS THAT YOU ARE GOING TO LEAVE IN THIS WORLD; HOW MUCH OF YOUR DAY GOES BY WORKING ON THE

SUBJECTS, WHICH WOULD BE BENEFICIAL FOR YOU IN THE ETERNAL LIFE AFTER DEATH?

Are you satisfied with your answer to this question?

If you have not found your answer satisfactory, then direct yourself towards knowledge and search for the truth.

DO NOT EVER GAMBLE WITH YOUR ETERNAL LIFE! IT IS IMPOSSIBLE TO COMPENSATE IT!

I am hoping to meet you in our book titled 'The Mysteries of Man'. May your days and nights be filled with valuable knowledge.

* * *

AHMED HULUSI

March 7th, 1989

ANTALYA

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN



ABOUT THE FIFTH EDITION

Since the year 1972, which was the time when the first edition of this book was printed in ten thousand copies, we have been granted plenty of knowledge about the system of creation and its secrets. We have talked about some of these findings in the book called **'MYSTERIES OF MEN'**, which was published in 1986 and the rest in the book called **'ALLAH AS EXPLAINED by HZ.MOHAMMAD'**, which was published in 1989.

28

We have chosen to talk about the subjects relating to the topics of this book here in this new book.

Compared to previous editions, we have tried to present detailed information in this edition regarding **'THE SPIRIT'**, **'THE ALIENS'**, **'THE ANGELS'** and the structure of the **'HUMAN BEING'** in the life beyond death.

Mawlana Jalaluddin Rumi has a statement, which we adore and find very much in line with our principles.

'Everything belonging to the past has been left in yesterday my dear, in this present day, it is necessary to say new things!'

Yes, as you would understand from our books published up to now, AHMED HULUSI never likes to spend his time by

repeating yesterday! It is not his principle to repeat the information and the ideas that people cannot evaluate, because they have become accustomed to them!

AHMED HULUSI is not a Hodja! (Religious Cleric)

AHMED HULUSI is not a Sheikh! (Religious Mentor)

AHMED HULUSI is not a religious man!

AHMED HULUSI was in a state of denial approximately 30 years ago at which time he received a 'divine warning', which made him start to carry out his researches on 'religion' in an objective way. His starting point was the commentaries and the sources on which everybody had agreed fully, as well as the **hadiths** (sayings) of the '*Qutub-u Sitte*' (Six Hadith Collection Books). From this point onwards, he lived the Sufism in such a perfect way, to every single delicate detail in order to serve the necessary practices of Sufism. Afterwards, he formed a relation between the scientific data and the metaphors, which are mentioned in religion and he ended up with a synthesis, which he thought was essential for our time.

According to **AHMED HULUSI**, '**Religion is a complete SYSTEM!**' This is a system, which can be understood easily by an average mind focusing to this subject. The Koran and the **hadiths** (sayings) left no single subject unexplained.

Solving the given secret messages is the most important thing. Therefore, the task, which needs to be performed by a man with a perfect mind, is to evaluate this treasure of science that has been granted to him.

Yes, in this book of Ahmed Hulusi and the ones that will follow, you are going to find some explanations, which will help you to evaluate the concept of 'RELIGION' with a

contemporary understanding, an understanding that would also be evaluated beyond this age.

Insha'allah (By the Will of Allah), Allah has preordained us that we would be helpful to you by presenting with our ideas, which will provide you with a new understanding for COMPREHENDING the religion and not making any reform in the way it is being understood!

* * *

Yes, we have now come to the point of giving some preliminary information regarding the '**JINNS**' and the '**ALIENS**' whose existence is totally being denied and never understood by some primitive minds, which causes them to reject the '**KORAN**' fully.

30

Whenever we hear the name '**JINN**', almost all of us fall into a huge misunderstanding.

Some of us might think in the following way.

They are beings with a height around 70–90 centimetres, their feet facing backwards, with long ears, the pupils of their eye resemble a cat and looking very straight; they are beings moving very fast, either male or female who can be seen in all kinds of roles.

On the other hand, some of us might think in the following way.

The hallucinations experienced by the people who have certain brain disorders!

So, what is the truth then?

First of all, let us know for sure that an individual either have a kind of mental disorder such as megalomania, paranoia or

schizophrenia, making him think that he is the only superior person in the world who knows the best, or he may have the necessary perfection to admit that there can be lots of other things, which he may still not know besides the things that he has learned and thought so far.

Denial is due to primitiveness; whereas knowing one's limits is due to the perfection!

There are countless individuals who have no alternative but to accept what they had rejected yesterday, simply because their knowledge or technique has developed considerably. Therefore, we should learn a valuable lesson from all these, so that we would not be an example for the others in the same way.

31

Let us know that...

We are making our biggest mistake by thinking that there are ALIENS, extraterrestrial beings from the space that have a physical body like ours.

Our second important mistake is to depend heavily on the past and having wrong conditionings. For this reason, we cannot evaluate the meanings properly, which means that our minds are simply blocked, understanding only the words, but not the actual meanings.

For example, the moment we hear the word 'JINN', we immediately deny this in a very primitive way and say: 'There cannot be such a thing, it is all made up and these are all nonsense'.

On the other hand, if we research on this subject, perhaps we will learn lots of things that we did not know before and we will find the answers and solutions to all our questions.

Now, if we can do it, let us try to save our brain from the state of being blocked by the conditionings, let us try to be broad minded and think without prejudices.

* * *

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN

1



STARTING FROM THE HUMAN BODY

Let us start with the human body.

We know that the human body has a complex structure, which is made up of billions of cells. The dominant power controlling the activities of this particular structure is the bio-electric system.

Similarly, all the activities carried out by the brain are formed by means of this bio-electric energy in a continuous way.

In the preceding years and the centuries, the bio-electric power, which formed the activity of the brain, was not known. People were far away from solving the matter and therefore, they tried to approach the subject in such a way, using definitions based on metaphors.

According to the old classical understanding, there was ‘a body made of flesh and bones’, which possessed a **‘SPIRIT’** and came into this body from somewhere outside in order to give it a **‘Life’**. Moreover, it was assumed that the ‘conscious’, which became apparent in the human body were also apparent within this spirit.

As a matter of fact, this is not the truth of the matter!

'Life' exists everywhere on the earth and in every point of the universe!

The phenomenon pointed out by the word **'Life'** is exactly the same thing, which is referred by the word **'Conscious'**.

For this reason, both on this earth and in the universe, there is absolutely no single thing **'WITHOUT LIFE and WITHOUT CONSCIOUS'**!

However, we should not underestimate the following important point.

35 Whilst thinking in a blocked state of mind, our brains are **blocked by our five senses** and therefore it would surely not accept the existence of any other **living conscious creature** apart from itself!

Because the brain is in a blocked state, it will not be able to evaluate any data delivered beyond the five senses. This situation occurs due to the fact that the brain is blocked by the data which limits means that its work is limited by the five senses, as in the case of all the animals.

Whereas, with respect to a brain that is blocked by the five senses, we cannot talk about many things such as the waves that produce the visions in the TV or the radar waves or any other wave whose existence we could determine very easily today if we were to remain within the limits of the five senses.

* * *

Let us know that...

The five senses are given to us, so that we could obtain certain samples in segments from that whole, one being!

However, by taking samples in segments, we have fallen into a very big mistake, since we have been blocked by the 5 senses, which are used as a tool for perceiving all the things. In actual fact, they were given to us for the purpose of evaluating that one whole. As a result, we thought everything we had perceived through the five senses was all that we could perceive.

The universe exists from a scale of countless beings, which express various meanings. These wavelengths extend from one trillionth of a centimetre to many kilometres long. Today, out of this scale, what we are able to recognize from is not even a single water drop in the vast ocean.

36

However, in spite of this situation, we are still assuming that all the living things around us consist from those in which we could perceive with our five senses and anything beyond these is not possible, which is a very good example showing that we are obsessed by such old fashioned ideas.

* * *

If we can leave aside the view that we are living 'WITHIN THE UNIVERSE', which simply can be regarded as being in a mentally disordered state of mind, we can then start to talk about the system we are living in.

The molecular units, which forms the basis of all the 'LIVING THINGS' and belonging to the dimension above the atoms, together with all the other molecular units, which possess a body made of light and are the 'LIVING THINGS' belonging to the sub-atomic dimension do make up only the certain scales of the whole of the 'UNIVERSE OF LIVING THINGS'.

In the religious terminology, all the living things in the sub-atomic dimension are defined by the name 'ANGEL'.

As a matter of fact, in the religious sources, all the living things are summarized under two different structures.

'THE ANGELS', 'THE INS (Human Beings)' and 'THE JINNS'

* * *

From the sub-atomic dimension to the dimension of pure energy, all the structures made up of light originating from the *quants* have been described by the word 'ANGEL' and the structures in the dimension above these bodies of light (in the up-atomic dimension) have been described as 'INS (The human beings) and JINN'.

37

'THE BEINGS IN THE SPACE', which are pointed out by the word **'JINN'** are in fact a kind of hologramic beings, which exist with an astral body as we shall be talking about in more detail later.

Similarly, even **'THE HUMAN SPIRIT'** is a kind of **'HOLOGRAMIC BODY OF LIGHT'**, which is made up of the waves produced by the human brain!

In the human body, as a living and conscious organ, the liver carries out its task in a conscious manner, while being aware of its characteristics and functions accordingly.

Furthermore, it joins with the other organs of the body and produces the upper structure, which we call as the physical body and from this body the **'THE HUMAN CONSCIOUS'** is created, which is a type of being more superior to physical body.

Similarly, there are **'ALIVE and CONSCIOUS'** beings, which belong to sub-atomic and above atomic dimensions. They are systemic and galactic compositions, which comprise all the galaxies. In the religious terminology, these beings are named as the **'ANGELS'**!

* * *

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN

2



THE ANGELS

As a matter of fact, everything that exists in life takes its **'LIVELINESS'** and **'CONSCIOUS'** from the **'ANGELS'** that we have been talking about.

40

The atoms and the *quants* of light within the structure, which we point out by the word 'Computer' designates to a dimensional depth and an essence. Similarly, whenever the words **'the human being'** or **'animal'** or **'jinn'** are mentioned, the essence, the core, which makes up their basic structure, is being referred to and this is called as the **'ANGEL'**.

This is why the origin of all the beings called as the human, the jinn and animal are absolutely angels.

* * *

Most often the beings called as **'JINNS'** are confused with the **'angels'** and the **'IBLEES'** is thought to be an **'angel'** as well. This is because the above mentioned special points could not be grasped fully.

The IBLEES, who is in actual fact is an 'angel' with regards to its essence, but in reality is a 'JINN' is assumed to be the head of the angels within our public and among some **Hodjas**

(Religious Clerics). This misunderstanding is due to the fact that what we have explained above is not fully comprehended.

The Chapter of Al-Kehf, (The Cave), verse 50 in the *Koran-al Karim* points out to this fact in the following way.

‘ONLY IBLEES DID NOT PROSTRATE, BECAUSE HE WAS OF THE JINN!’

Yes, in general, the group of the **‘JINNS’** have not prostrated to the group of the **‘HUMANS’!** They are not going to do so! With regards to their structure, they are far more superior than humans as they have many qualities. Here, prostrating simply means to accept the superiority and to acknowledge the dominance. However, it doesn’t mean to bow in front of the human beings and put the head on the ground!

41

* * *

Yes.

‘THE ANGELS’ form the origin and the reality of all things, which we differentiate as living and non-living with respect to our sight. In addition to this, they exist in different dimensions with different sizes as alive and conscious beings.

The method of how the angels influence and direct the humans is a subject, which leads many people to curiosity.

For example, *Azrael* is the angel of death causing the people to die. It is always being asked. Is there only one *Azrael*, or many? How can *Azrael* kill countless living beings at the same instant?

Let me try to explain this by a simple example. The space craft, which is travelling to the planet Uranus, is being

directed from the NASA centre by means of the radio waves that are being sent from there and by the same method it is being prepared for various other duties.

The countless satellites like these within our orbit are also being controlled by the radio waves sent out by the NASA centre.

Similarly, by means of the radio waves sent out by the angel called *Azrael*, a certain circuit in the brain is affected, which makes the brain stop its functioning and cause the death.

The broadcast being made from the NASA centre reaches thousands of satellites at the same instant and does its duty. In the same manner, the waves radiated by *Azrael* are also being perceived by thousands of receivers at the same instant and the result is automatically created.

42

Like *Azrael*, all the other angels, through the light waves, which they radiate affect the brains or let me say it more deeply, the genetic chains, even the **'brains of the astral bodies'**, which we call as **'the SPIRIT'**. So, this is how they carry out their commands.

* * *

According to the information given by the possessors of wisdom, there are some angels who do not have a certain form, who are in subtle forms and are pure conscious. Furthermore, there are some angels who have a certain images as well.

Similar to the human body, which has a **'SPIRIT'**, **'the stars and the constellations have a SPIRIT'** too and in religion these have also been referred to by the word **'angel'**.

Moreover, each planet or star including the Sun has special living beings and these beings are also classified as the '**Angels**'.

* * *

For example, the Sun has its own living beings. In the religious terminology, the name given to these living things, which conforms to the structure of the sun, is *Zebani* (demons of hell). This name has been given to them with respect to the humans who will be going there.

43 Their duty is to humiliate those beings falling into their hands, simply by forcing them to do whatever they want. This is the reason why they are named as *Zebani* (demons of hell).

As a matter of fact, these beings are not bad by themselves. Due to the fact that they are living in the sun and been created there, they are very strong and lucid beings in comparison to us, meaning that they act and move at very high capacities. On the other hand, the spirits that would go to the sun from outside would be very weak and powerless in there, because they have been created on this planet earth where the gravitational force is very low with respect to the sun.

In various **hadiths** (sayings of the prophet Mohammad), it is being narrated that those who will be going to the hell will have huge bodies over there and they would only be able to crawl. This is because they are going from the world, which is a place with a very low gravity, to the sun where the gravity is very high.

Likewise, even the '**JINNS**' who have been formed under low gravity forces on earth are going to be tortured by the residents of this place that is named as the hell.

All the stars and the planets have special alive and conscious beings living on them similar to the sun. Of course, it is a necessary that they should have such special beings.

However, we are making a big mistake by searching for alive, human like creatures, made from blood, flesh and bones everywhere. By doing so, we are spending our lives running after wrong objectives all the time.

Yes, the time now has come for our opinions concerning the **'THE SPIRIT', 'THE HUMAN BEING', 'THE JINN' and 'THE ALIENS'**.

Here are those chapters.

* * *

AHMED HULUSI

January 21st, 1990

ANTALYA

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN



PREFACE TO THE EIGHTH EDITION

My Dear Friends,

With your valuable interest, we have managed to reach the eighth edition within a very short time. In return for your interest, we are going to continue to serve you by adding the chapter to our book, which covers the subject of the **'ALIENS'** extensively.

46

We had made our criticisms about the Holy Book claimed to have been given by the **'ALIENS'** from the point of Islamic religion in the newspaper **'Bugün'** (Today), which lasted for about seventeen days. In these articles, we had stated with the original examples that these declarations named as **'THE KNOWLEDGE BOOK FOR THE GOLDEN AGE'** were nothing but only a mere deception made by the **JINNS**.

I hope we had finally managed to present the people in a clear way on how the **'JINNS'** under the name **'The ALIENS'** have tried to make people believe in such fairy tales and take them away from the religion of Islam.

* * *

Starting from this edition onwards, we shall not be using the pictures which had taken up space in the previous editions, thinking that they are not of much use and covering too much

space. I hope that the book would be enjoyed more in this new form.

* * *

Hoping to meet you in our new books, I wish you all the happiness for the coming days.

* * *

AHMED HULUSI

November 1st, 1991



PREFACE FOR THE TENTH EDITION

I start my lines by saying that I am unable to express to my Lord how grateful I really am for granting us to prepare this book, which is the only one on this subject both in Turkey and in the WORLD since the year 1972.

48

In the seventies, while we were talking about the **'JINNS'** nobody did believe us. However, today the TV channels are full of events concerning the **'JINNS'** as many people have also made it a profession for themselves!

Even though they are named differently whether a medium, or 'a fortune-teller,' or 'a magician, a witch, a wizard', they all deal with the **'JINNS'** and communicate with them as you would see more clearly when you read the book!

We are hoping that this book will have hundred thousands of editions. It is therefore my desire that may *Allah* make it beneficial for all the human beings. I wish you all to have conscious days without the **'JINNS'**!

* * *

AHMED HULUSI

July 10th, 1993

ANTALYA

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN

3

**THE RELIGION AND SCIENCE**

On one side, there is the religious knowledge, which has been transferred from generation to generation since centuries and on the other side, there is a brand new scientific world, which has spoilt all that we knew by the progress it has made in the last century.

50

* * *

In today's world, many societies do not pay any attention to the religious information, assuming that they are all based on 'superstition'. The reason for this lies in religious books, which were arranged in such a way that they were meant to address the people of those times, as in the case of the newest one, which came 1400 years ago. Therefore, it is impossible to understand the message they are trying to deliver. People cannot simply solve or understand the words as well as the statements mentioned in many parts of these books, which point out to certain things. These factors cause many people of our time to stay away from the 'books' and the 'addressing' made by them. This is the reason why the religion is based on 'superstitions' as a whole.

On the other hand, the science has advanced considerably at the speed of light, especially in this century. Thus, it seemed to have abolished everything that was known up until now.

Meanwhile, many scientists such as Albert Einstein, Max Planck, Louis De Broglie, Schrödinger, Davisson, Germer and several others have discovered a special system of thought. Those who apply this particular system began constructing a new world of thought for the humans of the 21st century in a completely new manner.

Yes, today's science accepts that;

- 51
- a) The material structure of the universe is made up of hydrogen, which is unique in its own right.
 - b) Whenever the matter is transformed into radiation, it produces the energy of the stars.
 - c) Today, the universe looks like a vast electromagnetic compound in which the electromagnetic waves play a special role without any disturbance.
 - d) The matter changes its form with respect to the speed meaning that at high speeds, it is transformed into energy, which is beyond the matter.
 - e) The electro-dynamics manifest the reality in a way far better than mechanics.
 - f) The time and place is a relative concept.
 - g) The energy has a mass.
 - h) The existence of the photon is a simple light shot.

In addition to these, the science fully accepts and evaluates all those things, which were not thought before or were hidden in some way up until our time.

Whereas, poor Galileo had suffered in the courts of the inquisition in his time and spent days in torture rooms, simply because he had said '**the world is turning around**'.

I would now like to present you another point before I go into the main subject.

* * *

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN

4



THE HUMAN BEING WHO IS INCAPABLE OF PERCEIVING THE TV WAVES BY HIS FIVE SENSES!

54

Yes, in the light of the progressing science, the thinkers of our time are all united in the theory that all kinds of materials whether they are solid or liquid seem to be in a continuous state. Furthermore, they know that all the solid and liquid substances are made up of atoms, which are moving all the time. They organize their studies according to these principles.

Again, those individuals who assume in the light of the modern science also state that, because we have a rough and a solid structure, we cannot be aware of the atomic structure of the matter.

Similarly, they emphasize that the universe is a whole structure made up of electro magnetic waves, which produce even the tiniest particles and this fact is far beyond the comprehension of human perception.

* * *

In other words, the mentality, which accepted the fact that 'everything is matter and there is nothing beyond the matter', up until recently has failed totally. Instead, a completely new way of thinking was born, which pointed out that there is '**a vast universe**' out there that is made up from the elements completely and this is beyond the matter.

For the human being living on the planet earth with five senses, all of these light rays have become denser and they have become visible in the form of bulks, which are named as '**matter**'. In spite of all these circumstances, the human being could acquire the necessary qualities, which would enable him to pass over to the dimension beyond the material, only with the aid of his power of deep contemplation faculty meaning that he could finally manage to discover this great secret.

55

So, how could then the human who appear in solid material form with limited five senses manage to make this discovery?

Let us now see how this could be possible step by step in summary.

For the first time, the English Judge **Prout** had understood that each of the atoms contained in a simple object were a kind of structure, which is produced from the compound hydrogen atoms and in this manner he had explained that the universe was made from one essence, namely the hydrogen.

Following this discovery, in 1911 **Langevin** proved to the world of science that 16 hydrogen atoms make 1 oxygen atom and that there was a loss at the ratio of 8/1000 during this reaction.

* * *

So, this explained the fact that all the things the human being defined as ‘many’ by the naked eye was from one origin in reality; in other words, according to the religious terminology, the multiplicity had been from the oneness.

Following this, the famous scientist Albert Einstein has made the following statement:

‘Matter is energy and energy is matter! The difference in between them is only a temporary state.

If the thing, which we call as matter leaves its mass and starts to travel at the speed of light, we call it radiation, ray or energy.

Or else, if the energy becomes denser or turns into a solid or a stationary state, then this time we call it as material if we are able to determine its mass’.

For the first time in July 1945, some part of the tangible matter could be converted into light, motion, sound and energy in Alamogordo, New Mexico.

* * *

Afterwards, the electron, which was imagined to be round, turned out to be a portion of fluctuating electrical energy. Furthermore, the atom is considered as a heap of waves, which has been put one over the other.

So, at the end, we have no alternative other than accepting the fact that **‘Every single matter is produced from waves and therefore we are all living in a universe of waves’.**

* * *

These are the facts which could only be evaluated by a scientist on this planet.

However, in this **'universe of waves'**, there are so many things exist, which we could evaluate.

Let us now take a brief look at some of these waves and rays belonging to this one whole, which we can perceive by the five senses.

Here they are.

1. In the first place, there are those waves, which can be evaluated by the ear of a dog.

57 2. At the second place, there are those waves, which can be evaluated by the human ear.

3. At the third place, there are the waves evaluated by the ear of a cat.

After this, the rest are as follows:

4. The ultrasonic waves.

5. The radio waves (L-long, M-middle and S-short, which can only be evaluated by us with the aid of a kind of adaptor called radio).

6. The television waves (VHF- UHF – SHF- EHF and we can receive these waves by means of an adaptor called the television, which we can see by our eyes).

7. The radar waves.

8. The waves of the sparkles.

9. The waves of motion.

10. The rays between red and violet, which our eye can evaluate and determine in the form of colours.
11. Ultra violet rays.
12. The X-Rays (The Roentgen rays).
13. The cosmic rays (where the wavelength is shorter than 10.000.000.000.000th of a centimetre)
14. Some strange rays, which we cannot determine in spite of all the efforts.

There are lots of waves and rays other than those stated above, which has been determined by the science. However, the humans simply cannot evaluate the values they correspond to with respect to our structure.

58

Because the human being is limited in terms of perceiving these by the organs, which they use as a kind of tool for observing, they simply deny the existence of the infinite amounts of bodies of light most of the time, which are present in the universe.

Do you think this is correct?

* * *

The difference between being able to see and not being able to see is only equal to 3/100.000th of a centimetre.

It is such that, the area where the human eye can see starts at 0.0004 cm, which is where the ultraviolet rays start and the area where the human eye stops seeing is at 0.0007 cm, which is where the red light waves start.

However, apart from all these rays, there are so many countless other rays, which are being radiated from the sun.

So, beyond the red light rays, there are those rays whose wavelengths start from 0.0008 cm and end up at 0.032 cm.

In addition to these, beyond the ultraviolet light there are those rays whose wavelengths start from 0.0003 and end up in 0.0001 in cm, which can only be placed on a plate of photography. Even the light rays that have a shorter wavelength than these can be recorded on a film by the same method.

* * *

Now, let us place some emphasis on the *Roentgen* rays, namely the X-Rays.

59

As we all know, the X-Rays pass through our bodies and produce some findings with regards to various organs of our body, which are then placed on a film.

Moreover, during the process of passing through the body, they can cause some damage in the cells and the organs according to the findings of the medical authorities. This is the reason why the lower parts of the body of pregnant women and the new born babies are not recommended to be X rayed.

Whereas, we are all totally unaware of the fact that while these X-Rays pass through our bodies, they can even be harmful for us! The wavelength of these rays is approximately 100 millionth of a centimetre.

* * *

So, we are asking now:

If the human being cannot determine the existence of the X-rays and how they could actually pass through his body with

his five senses, then how can he deny the existence of waves, which are much higher in frequency? Or else, how can he say that there cannot be such a thing?

MOREOVER, HOW CAN HE DENY THE TRUE NATURE OF THOSE WAVES WHOSE FREQUENCIES HE IS STILL TOTALLY UNAWARE MEANING THAT HOW CAN HE DENY THE STRUCTURE OF THOSE BEINGS WHO ARE SAID TO BE MADE UP OF THESE WAVES?

Yes, let us now relate this matter to our subject:

In the Islamic sources, the being, which is described by the name **'JINN'** and called as the **'SPIRIT', 'FAIRY', or 'GIANT'** among the public is explained in the holy book Koran by the following verses:

60

'MIN MAREJEEN MIN NAR', meaning from the **smokeless fire**, that is from the **RAYS** (55-15) and **'Min NAR is SEMUM'**, meaning that **'the poisoning fire that can diffuse into the FINEST and DELICATE pores'**, or in other words **A BODY OF LIGHT** (15-27).

The **FIRE**, which is being described as **SMOKELESS, POISONOUS and DIFFUSING INTO THE PORES** is nothing other than the **RAYS** or the bodies made of waves that we all know today.

In other words, 1400 years before our time it was believed that the structure of light, which produced the beings called as **'JINN'** was described as **'Smokeless and a poisonous fire, which can diffuse into the tiniest pores'**.

According to us, describing the rays or in other words describing the live beings of light as **'smokeless and a poisonous fire, which can diffuse into all the pores'** 1400

years ago is one of the most leading MIRACLES of the *KORAN-AL KARIM*.

* * *

As it can be understood from this description, the structure of the beings called by the name of **'JINN'** is made from:

'A SMOKELESS FIRE, WHICH CAN PENETRATE INTO THE SMALLEST PORE OR IN OTHER WORDS, SOMETHING MADE UP OF A KIND OF RADIATION AS EXPRESSED IN OUR DAY'S WORDS'.

* * *

61 However, taking the level of understanding of the people of those days into consideration, this fact was not pointed out by the *Koran-al Karim* within the context of **'WE HAVE CREATED THE JINNS FROM SO AND SO RAYS'** 1400 years ago. Instead of this, it was described by using metaphors, such as **'smokeless fire'** or **'poisonous fire that can diffuse into the most delicate tiniest pore'**. Therefore, it was left to the intellectual capacities of the people who would eventually grasp that reality as soon as their scientific knowledge improves.

As a matter of fact, at the end of approximately 1400 years, which has passed since then, the science has made a tremendous breakthrough by leading to so many advancements. It has also managed to discover the existence of the light rays and the structure of the universe to some extent even though this was not good enough. After this stage, the truth that was desired to be pointed out by these verses has been made apparent by the people who could correlate the religion with science.

So that the existence of the **'JINN'** as well as other beings associated with them could be understood scientifically.

After this brief introduction we have made on the subject of **'JINN'**, let us now return to the world of science and take a close look at the findings of the science again while searching for the truth that lies beneath the expressions **'THE SPIRIT'**, **'THE HUMAN BEING'**, and **'THE JINN'**.

* * *

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN

5



THE UNIVERSE MADE UP OF LIGHT RAYS AND THE ASSUMED MULTIPLICITY

64

There was a young man working in the franchise office in Bern. He was only 26 years old. Their colleagues used to call him as Albert. However, as time went by, his style of thinking had made him become famous world wide and everybody started to address him with respect and honour as:

-Mr. Einstein.

The first thing that Einstein did was to publish an article, which would lead the science towards a brand new field in physics. At that time, the calendars made by the human beings were showing the year 1905.

First of all, Einstein proved that our ideas about space and time were wrong.

He told that the space was only a name given to the arrangement of the material things within the existing possibilities. At the same time, he said that time was not something outside of us, but it was something that existed in our minds and it was nothing more than the events following one another in a successive order.

Einstein was trying to explain these in a clear way in the following manner:

‘The thing that we call as space is not something outside of us. All the things that we perceive in space are in actual fact represent an undivided whole, which is arranged in a successive way, going from the inner structure (the essence) of the existence to the outer structure of the existence or vice versa. Even the time is part of this arrangement and it is nothing more than a method for comparing one thing to the other’.

* * *

65 At the time when science had a rapid development at an accelerated speed, in 1915 Langevin had proved that all the things, which were seen in our world as materials was in fact made up of one single origin.

Of course, this discovery could be made possible again by the aid of Einstein’s theory.

* * *

Meanwhile, in the 1900’s, the famous scientist Max Planck had made a statement by answering the question below that was being asked for a long time.

-Everybody knows that all objects placed over fire such as steel would become red at first and then its colour will change into orange, yellow and finally to white. This simply means that energy is being radiated whenever this object is being heated. Because of the spread of this energy, depending on the radiation and the temperature, the rays at different wavelengths are being formed. However according to which law does this radiation take place?

Yes, Max Planck spoke and he said:

-The energy being radiated by the objects is not continuous as it is in the case of a smoothly flowing river, but it is in an interrupted form or in the form of waves. So, we name each of these energy components that are being radiated in the form of waves as **'Quant'**.

The above statement of Planck could not be understood up until 1905, the time when Einstein's statements were declared.

However, this point too could be evaluated only by Einstein and he added the following point to that discovery:

66

-All the radiating energy such as the light, the motion and the X-Rays are all entities located in the space in the form of quant, which are separate from each other.

Einstein had decided that this special effect of light could only be explained by assuming that the separate energy particles in the light, namely the photons are connected to each other. He also added that whenever one of these particles hit an electron, it would produce the same effect that is similar to billiard balls, which are getting knocked against each other.

While continuing to think in this way, he said the following:

-The photons in the ultraviolet light and beyond have an energy, which surpasses the energy of the photons in the red light and the ones that are beyond. So, the speed of each electron that jumps from the metallic plate is equal to the energy content of the photon, which strikes that plate.

* * *

Einstein explained all of these principles within the framework of a series of historical developments and as a result he won the **Nobel Prize**.

However, later on Einstein's idea stating that '**Perhaps the light is formed from separate particles**' has been met by the following idea which was more explanatory:

-Light has been formed from waves.

* * *

So, the question whether **light was in the form of waves or in the form of particles** could not be answered for some time.

67 At last, in the year 1925, Louis De Broglie said that it would be a more realistic approach to accept that the **electrons are not in the form of particles, but they are in the form of waves.**

Meanwhile, the scientists had started to determine that the electrons were not hard or elastically round spheres, but they were things, which were not possible to observe and to measure.

* * *

At this time, Sir J. Jeans gave his opinion:

'For a hard round thing, there is always a certain place in the space; however it seems that the electron does not have a special place like this. A hard sphere has a certain volume. However it would be meaningless to think how much place would a certain fear or a curiosity in the heart would occupy. This is the same in the case of the electron too'.

In the year 1927, the Viennese physicist **Schrödinger** has put forth an idea, which could explain the events pertaining to

the **quant** by attributing special wave movements to protons and electrons.

Also, in the same year, the two American scientists Davisson and Germer had proved through their experiments that the electrons behaved like waves. In this way, the fundamental principles connected with the matter have no longer been perceived as material anymore.

* * *

The electron, which was assumed to be imagined as a hard spherical object in the old days has now turned into a part of electrical energy that fluctuates and the atom is considered to be a pile of waves that are put on one another.

68

In the end we have no any other alternative other than accepting the fact that the matter is one complete whole, which is made up of waves and the waves make it look as if it really 'exists' and finally say that:

-'We are living in a universe, which is made up of waves!'

* * *

These were not enough for Einstein.

He also examined the principles of how '**matter**' was transformed into energy, in other words '**beyond matter**'.

He explained this as follows:

-The mass of a moving object would increase as its motion becomes accelerated. So, when it turns into a kind of energy, it means that the mass of a moving object would increase.

In other words, to state it more clearly, **energy is mass!** The energy found in any particle of a matter is equal to the multiplication of the mass in grams by the square of the speed of light in one centimetre within a second.

This means that if it were possible to transform one kilogram of hard coal completely into energy, then the energy which would be obtained is 25 billions kilowatt hours of electricity, that is a million times a million. If all the energy sources in the United States work continuously for two months, only then they can generate this amount of energy.

* * *

69 Yes, in spite of all these advancements, the humanity and the scientific world have come face to face with such a question that can never be answered objectively. Here is the question:

-What is the nature of this ore, which we call as mass or energy? Where does its power come from?

Here is another question.

-As matter is transformed into energy, can it be re-transformed into matter again? Is this impossible?

The objective science was able to transform the matter into energy and beyond matter. They managed to make this idea come true! However, science was not successful in re-transforming the matter back into its original state or in other words into the matter, as it initially did transform it into beyond matter state or energy.

* * *

However, here we should state that:

-SOONER OR LATER, SCIENCE WILL BE ABLE TO TRANSFORM THE MATTER THAT IT HAS TRANSFORMED INTO ENERGY, (i.e. beyond matter) BACK INTO MATTER AGAIN, WHICH WAS ITS ORIGINAL STATE!

As a matter of fact, this is nothing other than **'Tayy al-makan'** (the folding of space) or the explanation of the event known as **'ISRA'** (The night journey) that is seen in the **Islamic Sufism**.

Today, the event of **'clairvoyance'** is explained only partially by the television. In the event of clairvoyance, a saint can see from where he is the events that are taking place at a far away distance.

70

One of the saints of today says:

-'If we had not been able to see Egypt from our mats, then you would watch what was happening in Europe with great difficulty from here'.

In other words, if the human body and the brain were not equipped with such a quality, then discovering the television for you would be very difficult for you.

This statement simply shows that every single thing explained by the science is in fact experienced by the possessors of Sufism in their normal lives, which proves that they live according to the principles of positive science. We are investigating this subject more extensively in much detail in our book named **'MYSTERIES OF MEN'**.

* * *

Yes, as a conclusion, we can say that today, the objective aspect of the human science is stated by the **Theory of**

Relativity and the inner limit is stated by the **Quantum Theory**.

The **Theory of Relativity** constructs our world of thoughts in an objective manner and it refers to the facts regarding the place, time and the force of attraction, which are too far and far too big for us to perceive.

Meanwhile, the **Quantum Theory** has opened for us the gateway that we should accept the facts about the matter, the atom, the energy units and their characteristics, which are beyond the human realisation.

* * *

71

In the old days the human beings thought that everything was made up of materials and they denied the beyond material concept since they considered everything beyond the matter as non-existent in the name of science.

Whereas if the human being does not accept the concept of beyond matter in the light of the science in this present time and denies it, then he is considered as a 'Simple, primitive creature'.

* * *

Yes, dear readers, the physicists who lived hundred years ago had described the red colour of a rose as a subjective feeling, a kind of sensing, which is connected with having discovered something. In spite of the fact that they had given such a description, they believed that the thing that they called as red was simply a vibration from the space radiating the light.

However, the physicists of today name the same red colour as a wavelength and they accept that it has photons, which contains a certain amount of energy.

* * *

As a result of these points of view, a famous physicist has said the following cynical words:

-One should use the Quantum theory on Mondays, Wednesdays and Fridays and on Tuesdays, Thursdays and Saturdays; he should use the theory of wave mechanics!

Yes, the concepts that are being used in both of the above cases are some abstract things that have been created by the imagination.

Whenever a thorough examination is carried out on concepts such as the force of attraction and the electromagnetism, the energy, the electric current, the momentum, the atom and the photon, it can be seen that they are all well established ideas, which point out to certain things.

72

As a matter of fact, the human being has come up with these ideas in order to find out the obvious reality, which he calls as the origin of all the things, both on earth and in the sky. He has discovered all these by his own mind.

All the things that we have discussed above and the great advancements being made in science have shown the human beings something definite, which has tried to make them learn and perceive the following fact:

BEYOND THE MATERIAL WORLD THAT WE KNOW, there exists an unknown dimension that is so huge, so vast that it cannot be grasped by any comprehension and this is named as THE DIMENSION BEYOND MATTER.

If a human being who has a faculty of thinking ignores that beyond this material dimension, there is nothing else and therefore it does not exist and if he denies that these things,

which are said to belong to this beyond material dimension also doesn't exist, then this would show his simple mindedness and how primitive he could be. Even living at the end of the 20th Century or being closer to the scientific world would not change anything for that person.

For this reason, the human being of our time who has a thinking mind knows that denial is a weapon, which is used to defend a person's ignorance or his lack of knowledge in a certain field.

Following our short tour in the scientific world and putting in front of us what we have seen so far, let us now turn back to our main subject in the light of these.

73

In this universe of waves where there are various electromagnetic forces made of dissimilar nature, which play their roles without disturbing one another, let us try to understand what the human being is all about and what **'THE SPIRIT'** and **'THE JINN'** really are that are said to be related to the human being.

How would the humans who are free from the blockages of the five senses, riding on the faculty of contemplation and walking in the light shed by the projectors of religion and science evaluate the words **'THE SPIRIT'**, **'THE HUMAN BEING'** and **'THE JINN'**.

Out of all these we counted, only the **'HUMAN BEING'** is known to us. We know only about the outer structure, in other words the physical body of the human being.

* * *

Let us start our investigation with **'THE SPIRIT'**.

Let us come to the subject of SPIRIT.

6

**WHAT IS THE ‘SPIRIT’?**

After we have written this book, many ignorant people asked us questions by relying onto the knowledge, which they have heard from the words of other people.

74

-How can you make explanations about the SPIRIT when it states in the Koran that even the Prophet was not informed on this subject?

Yes, let us begin our explanations by answering this question first.

* * *

Three Jewish scholars decided among themselves to ask three questions to Hz. Mohammad and they say to each other the following:

-‘If he really is a prophet, then he wouldn’t be able to answer all of these three questions, because no other prophet before him has made an explanation on this subject.

However, if he answers them, then we will know for sure that he is a charlatan’.

So, thinking in this manner and agreeing on what to do they come in front of the *Rasool* (Messenger) of *Allah* and ask their first question:

-What is the SPIRIT?

By means of the divine grace granted to him, Hz. *Rasool* (Messenger) of *Allah* is aware of their intention, so he does not answer this question and postpones answering it. He says to the Jewish wise men:

-Come again tomorrow and insha'allah (if Allah wills) I will give you an answer.

75

When they come the following day, he reads them the 85th verse in the chapter of Al-ISRA (The Night Journey/ The children of Israel), which is the 17th chapter of the Koran. He says:

-'Yas'alunake aner ROUH. Kulir ROUHU min amreey Rabbiy va ma utiytum minel ilmi illa kaleeyla'.

We can translate the fact, which has been emphasized here into our language in the following manner:

-THEY (the JEWS) ARE ASKING YOU ABOUT WHAT THE SPIRIT IS. SAY (to the Jews) THAT THE SPIRIT IS BY THE COMMAND OF OUR LORD AND FROM THIS KNOWLEDGE, YOU HAVE BEEN GIVEN ONLY A LITTLE'. (17-85)

If we are a person with a little bit of understanding, we can see that this verse is not addressed to the scientists, the men of wisdom, the saints or the *Nabis* (Messengers), but it has been addressed to the Jews whose point of views is entirely based on those things to do with materials and materialism alone!

In other words the Jews are being told that:

‘You do not have any knowledge about the SPIRIT, because you think that everything consists of materials and you deny everything that you cannot see, which means that your comprehension cannot go beyond your five senses!

You are a prisoner who would remain with what you have in your hands only. Because you are incapable of evaluating what is beyond the material.

This was the main reason why you have denied and not accepted Hz. JESUS who had explained that the real universe is the universe of the SPIRITS beyond death. So, how can you have knowledge about the SPIRIT?’

76

Even *IMAM AL-GHAZALI*, the well known Islamic scholar and the Saint with whom we are sharing the same opinion with says in the first volume of his book called *IHYA-ULUM-AD-DIN* (The Revival of the Religious Sciences) in the section of ‘*Rub’ul Ibadat* (The book of Worship)’:

‘-Do not think that our *Rasool* (Messenger) did not know the truth of the **SPIRIT!**

As a matter of fact, if one does not know about his **SPIRIT**, then he would not know anything about himself! So, how could an individual who does not know anything about his self would be able to know his *Rabb* (Lord)?

To know the truth of the **SPIRIT** does not only apply to the prophets as some saints and the wise men would know about it too, because they are not too far away from understanding it’.

* * *

Yes, speaking of *IMAM AL-GHAZALI*, we should not forget to mention about his two books in which he has given some of his most precious explanations.

First of all, let us give only the name of the first book. Those who wish may find and read this book.

His book is called '**MISHKATUL ANWAR (Niche of Lights)**', which is a small book published in Turkey by the Bedir publishing house. It consists of the opinions of *IMAM AL-GHAZALI* on the subject of '**the truth of the SPIRIT, the oneness of ALLAH and that there is nothing else in the whole existence other than ALLAH**'. I recommend those who are interested in this subject to find and read this book.

77

Before we talk about *IMAM AL-GHAZALI'S* ideas concerning '**THE SPIRIT**' in his book called '**Kitab al-maznun-bih ala gayri ahlehe**' (The book intended for the unwise), let us pay attention to *Ghaus ul-Azam Abdul-Qadir Al-Jilani's* explanations in his book called '**Kaseedah Ayniyye**' (Invaluable Arabic poems):

-'The declaration, which states that 'I have blown the Spirit into him', is only an allusion! You, the person who disputes; isn't the **SPIRIT** the same as **HIM**?

However, discontinue penetrating through **Haqq** (The Divine Truth)! There is nothing else other than Him! Everything is for HIS oneness! Oh, The Lord who is in the abundance! Oh! The creator of all the things! Your essence is the origin, which makes up everything!'

In these lines of *Ghaus ul-Azam* (Supreme Spiritual Helper) *Abdul-Qadir Al-Jilani* and in his explanations in the '**Risalat-al GAVSIYYE**' (Interpretation of Gavsiiyye), it can be seen that so many important explanations have been made about 'THE

SPIRIT' in the past. (Those who want to investigate the subject more deeply can refer to our book that has the same name).

* * *

Now, before going any further, let us mention some of the explanations made by *GHAZALI* and then give our personal opinion about **'THE SPIRIT'**.

GHAZALI rahmetullahu aleyh (May the mercy of *Allah* be upon him) says:

-'They have asked me about the amendment mentioned in the divine sayings (Koran Verse: 15-29) and what the SPIRIT was.

78

I have answered that the amendment mentioned in the divine sayings is an activity that is manifested at the location accepting the SPIRIT. At that particular location, the son of Adam and the following generations are all considered as being sperms under the condition that they should all be purified and renewed.

Whereas, blowing the SPIRIT is what gives the SPIRIT its energy, which is a drop of a fluid spreading in the embryo.

Similarly, if the semen can be formed with this characteristic, then no change will ever take place in the created SPIRIT. So, from this energy, the SPIRIT is formed in the embryo'.

Here, we should be extremely careful about the following very important point:

It is certain that the human 'SPIRIT' was not created before the embryo reaches a suitable stage of development.

GHAZALI continues his words about the 'SPIRIT' as follows:

-The SPIRIT is not a material thing or an object. It has not come to the physical body from the outside as the water flows into a cup! The material body can be divided into parts. However, the SPIRIT is not a body and it is not a divisible thing. If the SPIRIT could have been divided, then it would be possible for one of its parts to know one thing while the other part would not know anything. The idea of having two opposites in a single place is a contradiction.

The word part is not a suitable word for the SPIRIT. Because, the part points to the whole and that there is neither a whole nor a part. The SPIRIT is a structure, which cannot be divided at all; it also does not occupy any location'.

79

Also, it is said that 'The SPIRIT is a creation', which means that the SPIRIT was not present before but it has been formed afterwards. The SPIRITS of the humans have been formed after the formation of the embryo.

It is possible to state *GHAZALI'S* conclusions from his explanations on this and other subjects as follows:

'A- As a matter of fact, the SPIRIT is not a being that is created separately, coming into existence only by itself and it is *Baki* (Ever Existing ONE).

B- When it is not related to the physical bodies, THE SPIRIT is single. In other words, there are no pluralities and separations in the SPIRIT!

To put it in a more different way, it is not the SPIRIT of this or that person, but rather it is a general, single ONE SPIRIT!

C- When the SPIRIT is related to the physical bodies, it acquires some qualities and these qualities remain with the

SPIRIT eternally even after it has been separated from the corpses.

Because these acquired qualities are all different from one another, they produce certain characteristics within the **SPIRIT**. Therefore, in spite of the fact that the **SPIRIT** is **ONE**, it gets multiplied and increases as it was with the physical body of this person or that person before’.

You can find the opinions of *Imam Al-Ghazali* about the **SPIRIT** in more detail in a book called ‘Is it possible to deny *Allah*?’ which is written by *Şehbenderzade Ahmed Hilmi* from the *Sehbender* family in *Filibe* among the *Çağrı* publications.

Another possessor of truth, the possessor of *Allah* is *Hz. Abdul-Qadir Al-Jilani* who has made important explanations on the subject of the ‘**SPIRIT**’.

80

In his book ‘*Insan el-Kamil* (The Universal Man)’, in the chapter titled ‘The angel named Spirit’; *Abdul-Qadir Al-Jilani* talks about the only, the real ‘**SPIRIT**’ which is the origin of all. In Sufism this is named as ‘*Rouh Ul-Azam*’ (The Supreme Spirit). In addition to these, in the section ‘*Rouh-ul Kudus* (The Holy Spirit)’ he is giving us much more detailed information. Those who wish may check out this information from the mentioned books most of which consists of metaphors.

* * *

Now, let us state the things that we know about the **SPIRIT** and what it is in the light of today’s understanding.

* * *

The being, which is pointed out by the name ‘**SPIRIT**’ is the **ONE** with regards to its original structure. That is the origin and the reality of everything that we can think of.

Everything that you know, everything that you can think of as well as the things that you cannot think of have all been formed from the **'SPIRIT'**.

In my opinion, the statement, which points out that everything has been formed from the **'SPIRIT'** can be best explained by giving the following example:

Everything that we classify as **'matter'** is actually made up of atoms. No matter how and by which name we refer to anything, in reality that thing has been made up of atoms. If we go deep down to the essence of the atoms, we can come across to the **'ENERGY'** in the lowest dimension.

81 With respect to its structure in this dimension, Energy is an indivisible, infinite-limitless power, which cannot be broken into pieces; because its existence is formed by *Allah's* power!

According to the Essence of *Allah*, the energy, which is assumed to be created afterwards, was referred by the name **'SPIRIT'** in the past centuries!

This **'SPIRIT'** is the manifestation of *Allah's* attribute of **'POWER'**. Along with this, it is the **'Universal consciousness'** or by another definition it is the **'Cosmic consciousness'**!

* * *

'The consciousness' within the structure of every single thing comes from the **'Conscious found within the SPIRIT'**, which produce the essence and the reality of that thing. However, the conscious which becomes manifested in that certain thing manifests itself proportional to the capacity, the potential and the talent of that particular unit.

The **'SPIRIT'** becomes denser and denser and by going through different dimensions, it is being perceived by the

perceivers as different beings. Because of the evaluation of the perceivers, the spirit gives the impression that it consists from so many images!

Actually, the '**SPIRIT**' is an 'angel' as pointed out by *Abdul-Qadir Al-Jilani*. It is such an angel that every single being who exist in the universe, no matter what they are called and without any exception; has all been formed from this angel! That is the origin and the real source of everything! Furthermore, the **SPIRIT** is the origin and the truth of all of the angels as well as all the other beings!

Imagine lots of objects made up of ice. Things made of ice such as the humans, the animals, the objects! In spite of the fact that they are separate things, in reality their origin is the same single thing. It is the 'WATER'! It is the 'GAS' (H₂O)! Like saying 'the origin of all is the atoms'.

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN

7



THE HUMAN SPIRIT

After the fertilisation of the egg by the sperm on the 120th day in the womb, the fertilized embryo starts producing waves as it becomes subject to basic influences coming from the cosmic rays. This has been described as ‘The angel’s blowing the spirit’.

84

This structure (the embryo), which is considered to be the core of the brain receives the first basic cosmic influences and as a result of that, it obtains its first main program. In this manner, **‘the direction of his main program’** is being determined.

So, at this point the **‘personal SPIRIT’**, or in other words **‘the SPIRIT of the human’** becomes created! Before this instant, the **‘individual SPIRIT’** does not exist!

This is the reason why it is considered as a murder if the abortion takes place after the 120th day of the embryo’s growth!

On the 120th day, the core of the brain in the actual embryo starts to produce and sculpt ‘the astral body’, in other words

‘the personal spirit’. Therefore, even if the embryo is killed, this **‘SPIRIT’** carries on to live forever.

The basic characteristic of the personality however, is made up of the special information contained in the genes.

The genetic data can be considered as the seed itself; while the soil, fertilizers, the water and the humidity factors enabling the seed to grow and manifesting its qualities are considered as the ‘astrological programming’.

85

The brain, during its stage of development and whole life span loads all the information as well as the knowledge that it receives to the **‘Astral body’**, which is made up of **‘Hologramic rays’** and this body is named as **‘THE SPIRIT’**! This hologramic body resemble very much to the television waves. The television waves are the transmitting waves that are loaded with the vision and the sound. Similarly, the **‘Human SPIRIT’** is loaded with the data, which comprises of the outcome of all the functions of the brain!

Whenever the activity of the brain stops and the electromagnetic force of the physical body have been cut off, the event known as the ‘DEATH’ takes place. As soon as this happens, the person will feel himself living in a kind of ‘hologramic body of light’ and carries on living under this influence.

This is the state, which we describe as **‘Ba’su ba’d-al-Mawt’**; (Coming back to life again right after death)!

However, during his life in **‘The Astral Body’**, the individual will not find anything else other than what he had thought and felt or what kind of fears, anxieties and the love he had felt during his whole life time in his physical body,

Therefore, the individual will find himself in the **'Universe of Akhirat'** (The after life realm), in other words within the **'dimension of light'** or within the **'astral body'** with the same qualities that he had before while he was in the physical-biological body, meaning that he will be able to understand and accept himself by the proportion of how much he had felt these capacities in himself while he was in the physical body.

* * *

Thus, *H. Rasool* (Messenger) points out this fact in the following manner:

'-You shall die in the same state that you have lived; you shall again be revived (ba's) in the same state that you have died. And, on the doomsday, you shall be resurrected in this same state.'

86

The event we name as **'dying and being resurrected'** does not actually take place on the doomsday right after the death, but it is something, which takes place immediately at the instant following the death when the body can no longer be used!

In other words, for the conscious mind, life goes on continuously **without any intervals**, but it goes on through transformations; by getting transformed from the dimension of the **'biological body'** into the dimension of the **'SPIRIT-astral body'**!

This is the reason why we say that every individual who has **'tasted the death'** will, in the following instant, be buried in the grave alive with that spirit-body, being in a fully conscious state and total awareness!

Furthermore, he goes on living in the realm of grave being alive until the doomsday!

As a matter of fact, the concept that we repeat in **'Amantu'** (Belief in Articles of Faith in Islam) by the phrase **'Wal Ba'su ba'd-al-Mawt'**, (to believe in revival right after death') is the clear proof for this!

As can be seen, the event of **'BA'S'** (Revival) is not left until the doomsday; it is emphasized that it would take place **'immediately after death'**! The incident of **'BA'S'** originates from one of *Allah's* names, which is **'AL-BAIS'**. In order to have a better understanding, you can refer to the book of *IMAM AL-GHAZALI* named **'The Interpretation of Asma Ul-Husna** (Most Beautiful Names)'.
87

Those who want to investigate these points in more detail can read the chapter on **'THE INNER FACE OF DEATH'** in our book named **'ALLAH AS EXPLAINED BY HZ.MOHAMMAD'**.

Yes, starting from the 120th day onwards, the human spirit is loaded with the output of the brain throughout its lifetime. Soon after the spirit sets free from the limitations of the physical body, it goes on living in such a way that it is in accordance with the data and the energy it has acquired during its lifetime in this world.

For as long as the world exists, the spirits who live within the magnetic field of our planet, which is a world made up of light and considered as the twin of our planet, in other words within the world of *Barzakh* (Isthmus), they will be living in the universe of *Barzakh* (Isthmus) and they will either take their place in **'Hell'**, which is the dimension of the twin of the Sun made of light together with the planet earth since their energy is not sufficient or they will start their journey with

the other **'SPIRITS'** that are able to escape to the dimension of light within the stars in the galaxy, which is known as the **'heaven'** as soon as the doomsday arrives.

However, it should be noted that one day in the realm beyond death is equal to one thousand earth years as expressed in the *Koran-al Karim*. Also, according to the explanation made by Hz. Rasool (Messenger), 'just crossing over the *As-Sirat* (The Bridge) takes 3000 years'.

If, one day in the realm beyond death is equal to one thousand earth years, then think about what the three thousand earth years will be felt like. On top of that, try to imagine the kind of other units used to measure the time with respect to this.

88

So, under these conditions, it becomes absolutely necessary to think about these matters more extensively.

* * *

Yes, let us emphasize a couple of more points on the subject of the **'SPIRIT'**.

All the things that we know pertaining to the **SPIRIT** does in fact belong to the brain! For this reason, the **SPIRIT** cannot have any illness! Therefore, the **'Mental Illness of the SPIRIT'** is not a correct statement. However, in reality, the brain has problems associated with functional disorders and certain mental illnesses.

Every single brain produces its own spirit by means of a special code it contains. For this reason, whenever a brain is out of use, it is absolutely impossible that its SPIRIT will pass onto another brain! In other words, **reincarnation**, namely coming back to the world in a totally new physical body is

never possible; it is only a deception! Events of such nature are nothing more than the deception of the **JINNS**.

However, with the help of your brain waves, you can transmit the prayers and the Koran that you've read to the spirit of a deceased person.

That person can evaluate what you've sent him only if he had managed to receive such information during his lifetime in this world. Otherwise, the energy that you have transmitted in your message via your brains gives him comfort for some time only and then he goes back to his previous condition right away.

-‘It is said that in the universe of the grave where life will go on for billions of years, the individual will exist as a **SPIRIT**, in an alive and conscious state. For this reason he should not feel the torment or the suffering. Then, what is the torment or the suffering in the grave and how does it take place?’

This is one of the most frequently asked questions. Let us answer it.

The individual in the grave and in the universe of graves is as conscious and aware as he was in the world. He can see his own body and the surroundings. Whenever various insects such as; worms, mice, snakes, centipedes come and start to eat his face as well as his cheeks, he would perceive this event as if he himself is being eaten! The reason for this is that, during all of his life time in the world, he had accepted that body, that face as himself and this acceptance had been loaded onto the astral body, namely onto his conscious! Therefore, he'll automatically look at this event by being in

that awareness and with this conscious, which in return would result that he'll feel great pain and torment!

We can give the following example to illustrate this. During the day time, you are afraid of various things and then you go to sleep. In your sleep, you are seeing the things that you have been afraid of and now they are in your dream! Well, physically there is nothing being done to your body, but during the daytime, those things that have been placed in your mind have turned your life in the dream you are seeing at that instance into a night mare!

Mainly, the life in the grave is in three parts.

- a) The life in the grave;
- b) The life in the world of grave;
- c) The life in the *Barzakh* (Isthmus).

90

You can find more detailed information about the **'Life in the world of grave'** and **'Life in the Barzakh'** in our book titled **'ALLAH'**.

So, the life in the grave will turn automatically into a nightmare if one has not taken the necessary precautions during his life in the world. It will be impossible to wake up from this nightmare! In the religious terminology, this state has been explained as the **'punishment in the grave'**.

As your daytime and your level of awareness is being reflected to your dreams and it is not in your hands to change those dreams, so will your life in the grave continue until the day of judgement in a similar way, which would be impossible to alter.

Against this endless nightmare, the grievance and torment in the grave, you have the chance to take precautions now during this lifetime. In this way, it would be possible for you to protect yourself. This is the reason why 'religion' has come.

In other words 'RELIGION' has not come in order to worship an imaginary god up there, but it has come for the purpose of 'making the human beings learn about the life beyond death, prepare themselves according to those conditions, allow them to understand what their own truth is and make them try to perceive *Allah*'. You can find more detailed information on this subject in our book titled '**MYSTERIES OF MEN**'.

91

The phenomenon we call as '**the power of the spirit**' is nothing other than the powerful radiation of the brain. This quality in the brain is also being loaded onto the **SPIRIT**, so that '**the spirit**' will have this power as well.

As for the event that is named as '**the saint providing enlightenment**'.

This person comes to the point of using an important portion of his brain capacity as a result of the intensive practices that he had made known as *Zhikr* (Remembrance of *Allah*) and *Riazat* (the efforts spent for good conduct in the way of *Allah*). For this reason, he is able to transmit very strong and powerful waves to others.

Whenever you find such a person, that person will direct his powerful brainwaves to your brain. It is right at that moment that an additional capacity in your brain, which was idle and had not been utilized until that time will start functioning. You'll then be able to understand very easily a certain point, which you could not understand or had noticed before. The few sentences that he will say are going to make some

important developments in you, because they are being accompanied with such a power. So, the people say 'I went to see such a valuable person and he enlightened me with such things and as a result I have managed to solve many matters at that moment!'

* * *

In actual fact, the waves radiated or transmitted by the brain are of two kinds:

- 1) The general extended waves.
- 2) The directed waves.

The brains of all the people already radiate the general extended waves.

92

However, the prayers consist of the waves that have been directed.

For example, there is a special type of prayer, which is made for having rain. This is a situation whereby a group of people come together and generate brain waves for a certain purpose. Their efforts are meant for generating a sort of magnetic field, which will help to gather the clouds in that region so that it starts raining!

Similarly, the women who come together in order to pray for a certain wish to come true all pray and do the *tasbeeh* (repeating certain prayers in a certain number of times) and ask for that wish to come true, so in this manner all the members of the group focus their brain power (direct their brain power) for that certain wish.

* * *

Hajj (Pilgrimage to Mecca) is also a much more extensive and powerful example of this type of thing as well. You can find the important facts, the most delicate details as well as the secrets on this subject in our book named '**MYSTERIES OF MEN**'.

* * *

If, many people, even if they are in separate groups start praying all at the same time for the same wish after they've reached a certain level of concentration, then their wish will most probably be come true.

93 As a matter of fact, during the war of Liberation of Turkey, people came together in *Mawled* (singing funeral hymn for a deceased person) sessions or they organized some other meetings in which they prayed all together. In other words, during these meetings, all the people directed and focused their brain waves for a certain objective and this in return had established a great spiritual power over the society as a whole.

The phenomenon that is known as spiritual help is nothing but the concentration of all the brains focusing for a certain objective and radiating power in return.

In fact, at this point, there is the possibility of establishing connection with certain 'angelic' powers as well as with the **JINNS** who are introducing themselves as the extraterrestrials (the beings from the outer space). However, here we do not want to discuss that subject.

Even the individuals who have very high spiritual powers like '*Rijal-ul-Ghaib*' (Hidden Spiritual Men) and the '*Qutub-ul-Irshad*' (Pole of Enlightenment) transmit various sciences to the whole world by means of their powerful brain waves.

These waves, which are transmitted are received and then evaluated by those brains that have the potential to receive them.

On the planet earth, certain subjects are perceived and then put into practice by certain people who are not even aware of each other. This is due to the fact that these people transmit powerful waves by their brains as it was mentioned above. We can say that even the new trends in fashion all over the world are being transmitted in this manner.

These points have been explained to a certain extent through metaphors by the valuable scholar; the man of wisdom *Muhyiddin Ibn 'Arabi* in his book called '*Futuhut al-Makkiyya*' (Meccan Revelations). Those who wish may refer to that book.

94

* * *

The word '**SPIRIT**' expresses two main characteristics to us:

1. The science has finally reached to the point of discovering particles of light, which is named as photons and according to the current data at our hands now, we know these as the essence of the matter. So, the '**SPIRIT**' is the '**ESSENCE**', which makes up the energy that these photons, namely the particles of light currently have! In other words, it is the **Universal Quantum Whole!**

* * *

As can be understood from this explanation, every single particle found in the entire universe has been produced with the '**SPIRIT**' and from the '**SPIRIT**'.

* * *

The **SPIRIT** exists within all the single particles and without it there isn't any single particle. As a matter of fact, the particle or '**the quant**' exists with the existence of the spirit!

* * *

Every particle of light receives its energy, which enables it to move from the '**SPIRIT**'.

Therefore, from the very first moment the universe existed, it has had the '**SPIRIT**' and it has continued to exist with the '**SPIRIT**', which means that it will carry on to exist in this manner until the doomsday when it will come to an end.

95

According to religious terminology, it is said that the universe has been created with the '**SPIRIT**'. In actual fact, it is impossible to assume that the destruction of any being, which exists with the '**SPIRIT**', can be possible.

* * *

2. The '**ESSENCE**', which is named as the '**SPIRIT**' finds its place in every quant and at the same time it is the source of all the '**CONSCIOUS**'. This means that in every single thing, which exists in the universe, there is a certain amount of conscious. However, we should know for sure that the conscious is not something that can be divided and separated into parts.

Therefore, every single action that takes place within the universe is the result of the '**CONSCIOUS**' and it can never be some coincidence. Even if they appear to us in a disorderly fashion, they are in fact in a certain order as a whole.

Even the animals, or the objects or the particles that are thought to be without any **'CONSCIOUS'** act in a certain order since they all carry a certain amount of conscious. However, they are far from realizing this fact due to their present structures. Even we cannot perceive their situation as long as we remain within the limits of our physical five senses.

* * *

As a matter of fact, if we had to show a proof to prove our ideas in religious terms, then take a look at the following verse:

'WITHOUT ANY EXCEPTION, ALL THE BEINGS THEREIN PRAISE AND DECLARE HIM! HOWEVER, YOU CANNOT UNDERSTAND THEIR PRAISE'.

96

(Chapter: 17 -Verse: 44)

Yes, for the human being, it is an impossible task to understand that neither the nature of the tiny particles, which the science name as **'quant'** nor their relation with the **'conscious'** and the order in which they perform their duties could be understood, because he is limited by the physical senses and the biological body! This is something, which can only be perceived, it can only be grasped and that's all.

* * *

Now, I'll quote a verse from the *Koran-al Karim*, which gives information about the **'SPIRIT'**:

'SAY: THE SPIRIT IS BY THE COMMAND OF MY LORD; YOU HAVE BEEN GIVEN ONLY A LITTLE KNOWLEDGE FROM IT'.

(Chapter: 17/Verse: 85)

While the famous Islamic thinker and the Sufi master *Ismail Hakki Bursevi* explains this verse in one of his books, he says that the word **'kalil'** in Arabic (which means 'a little' in English) comes from the Arabic word **'iklal'**. He says that the meaning of this word is understood as picking up something from the ground, so that the verse simply wants to imply the meaning that 'everyone can learn something about this subject with respect to their capacity.

The composition of the particles of light that we name as the photons in a certain order and proportion in the dimension beyond the material world produce the original structure of the beings we name as the **'HUMAN BEING'** and the **'JINN'**. Whenever this composition becomes denser by certain amounts, then it produces the various levels of these creatures. In other words, it produces the things, which wrap them up as in the case of periphery of the human being and the jinn. This composition, which is made up from photons comprises one more characteristic. This is the composition of the photons, which we specify as **'partial consciousness'** and this is the actual **CONCIOUSNESS** that is manifested most evidently in the **'human beings'**.

* * *

Of all the creatures that exist in the universe, the beings who have **'CONCIOUS'** and therefore the **'SPIRIT'** are the **'HUMAN BEINGS'** and the **'JINNS'**.

Moreover, due to the qualities mentioned below, the **human being** is differentiated from the other beings we have stated in the following way:-

1. The fact that the power and the capacity of the conscious that he has.

2. The fact that his composition has become denser in comparison with the others and it has become limited because of the qualities experienced physically.

So, we think that we have managed to explain to a certain extent the meaning that the word **'SPIRIT'** carries.

Hamdi Yazır of Elmalı, who is a famous commentator of our times, gives the following information about the **'SPIRIT'** in his book titled *'Hak Dini Kur'an Dili'* (The True Religion/The Language of Koran). When looked at carefully, it'll be seen that these explanations conform to what we have written completely:

'Whenever the word **'SPIRIT'** is mentioned, three points of view has been stated:

98

- * **The beginning of action;**
- * **The beginning of life;**
- * **The beginning of realisation.**

When we consider the first point; that is the beginning of action, we can see that the SPIRIT is the actual force, which is the exact equivalent of the material. Whenever the words matter or force, matter or SPIRIT is mentioned, this point is indicated. This meaning is the most general and extensive meaning of the spirit. For example, according to this meaning, electricity is a spirit and every moving power is a spirit.

However, according to the view of beginning of life, the SPIRIT is something that is far more specialised; because the power of life is much more specialised than the absolute power. There are two views, which need to be considered here. One of these views is the life, which covers the life of

the plants also. Because of this meaning, the life of all the plants has also been referred as the spirit. The other meaning is the famous meaning, in other words the life of the animals, which is eventually manifested as the life of the human beings. With respect to this meaning, the SPIRIT is much more specific than the spirit of the plants and therefore it embraces the spirit of the plants too.

This is followed by the SPIRIT, which is the starting point of realisation; in other words the faculty of conscience in its simplest form. From this point, it covers all the conscious events such as talent, skill, comprehension, knowledge, will power, up to the verbal speech and so on. Therefore, in this respect, the SPIRIT is the means for the spiritual life. This meaning, which expresses the most valuable quality of the spirit, manifests itself in the human *nafs* (soul) and for this reason it has been named as the human spirit.

This is the spirit, which distinguishes the animal spirit from the human spirit and manifests itself in human being with the knowledge of *Haqq* (The Divine Truth) so that the human being could know himself. In fact, this is the reason why the declaration 'I've blown to him from my spirit (Wa nafahtu fihi min rouhey)' has been made. We could feel this spirit in ourselves and identify it by means of faculties such as the conscience, the will power and reasoning as well as by the words that we use, which relates to our inner psyche.

However, if the truth of the spirit was not beyond the truth of the human being, then the human being would never be able to realize anything about the truth of the matter and therefore all the truth would be limited by the human being only. However, for a human being, so many things are still

unknown. On the other hand, there are only a few things he knows.

*** * ***

As we can see, the SPIRIT is the centre of the realization and the starting point that is blown to human being's nafs (soul), being similar to the air, light and heat that has been blown to the physical body of the human being. In the end, the nature of the human soul and whether or not this soul is spiritually advanced is a matter, which is directly proportional to the degree of this blowing.

(Hak Dini-'The True Religion' Volume: 5, Page: 3198-3199)

*** * ***

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN

8



THE STRUCTURE OF THE ‘HUMAN’ AND ITS CHARACTERISTICS

102

We can examine the creation that is known by the name ‘**Human**’ and manifested in a physical body in three different parts.

1. **THE HUMAN.** This is a being with CONSCIOUS! In Sufism, it is named as the *Rouh ul-Nurani* (The Spirit of Light).
2. **The SPIRIT body.** This is the ‘**Astral body that has a hologramic appearance**’. *(Detailed information concerning the hologramic body made of light named as the ‘SPIRIT’, its structure and various types is given in our book titled ‘MYSTERIES OF MAN’, Chapter: THE INNER FACE OF THE SPIRIT)*. It is also known as the periphery. This is not the spirit that is referred as the animal-like spirit! The structure of the **Animal-like Spirit** is formed by the bioelectrical energy. This is the energy that produces and maintains the liveliness of the biological body, which is reflected out as the aura.
3. **THE BODY.** This is the physical, biological structure, which carries and serves the brain so that it can produce the **astral**

body, which has a hologramic appearance and named as the **'human spirit'**.

* * *

Now, let us try to explain these respectively.

1. THE HUMAN

The being that is named as the **'HUMAN'** is in fact created from a **'CONSCIOUS'** structure.

103

This conscious has a kind of structure, which consists of thoughts produced by the brain. What we refer as the **'personal consciousness'** is actually the result of the genetic information, which is found in the formation of the brain, plus the personal characteristics that are the outcome of the astrological influences as well as the conditionings and the system of thought, which inevitably arises due to these factors.

The qualities that we have mentioned above are actually formed by the brain and they are then loaded onto the **'astral body'**, which we call as the **'SPIRIT'**. And by being in this body of light, the astral body carries on to live until the infinity.

In actual fact, the term **'CONSCIOUS'** is a totally separate entity from the astral body and at the same time, it is the astral body itself! If the astral body hadn't exist, the brain would still be able to form these characteristics, however the **'personal conscious'** would come to an end by the termination of the brain's functions called the death. In this case, it would no longer be possible to speak about a life beyond death. However, the brain has made the **'HUMAN conscious'** immortal by means of producing the **'hologramic body of light'** named as the **'SPIRIT'** and loading all the

information it contains onto this body of light, which is going to live eternally.

* * *

Even the **'astral body'** that we name as the personal spirit carries on to live by being dependent on the **'absolute spirit'**.

If an individual can attain the dimension of the **'conscious'**, he would not only be able to find himself within the dimension of **'cosmic consciousness'** but also be able to reach the **speed of thought**, which is much more higher than the speed of light. Living in this dimension is something, which is almost impossible to express by words.

No matter how much the individual conscious knows itself as the **'cosmic conscious'**, no matter how much it feels like this, the concept of **'personality'** will never disappear until infinity!

As soon as the individual conscious purifies itself from the conditionings, it may then recognize itself as the **'Cosmic Conscious'** by achieving a higher level of conscious.

All those things referred by the words **'Nafs'** (Soul) and expressed as the **'self'** does in fact belong to this **'personal conscious'**.

The original state of the **'personal conscious'** is also called the **'Nafs Al-Safiyah'** (The Pure Soul).

The **'cosmic conscious'** that is pointed out by the term the **'Pure Soul'** has been veiled by the conditionings as well as the values that are the outcome of these conditionings and the feelings, which are the result of these judgemental values. In this manner, the cosmic conscious get separated from its own essence and in the end it descends to its lowest level of the

conscious, which is named as the '**Nafs of Ammarah**' (The Commanding Soul).

* * *

'**Nafs**' is a term, which refers to the **conscious of the 'self'**! The more it gets refined from its conditionings, the more it can find its own true '**self**' within the dimensions of the essence and hence, it becomes '**closer to Allah**'.

2. THE SPIRIT

The Spirit is the '**astral body**' in which the immortal being that is known as the '**human**' lives his eternal life within. It has a holographic appearance! It is made up of the **loaded waves**.

105

* * *

It is produced by the brain, which has the function to load all the mental activities it contains to the spirit in the form of waves.

* * *

The brain creates the bio-electric energy in the physical body via the nervous system. The moment this energy is cut off, the magnetism of the body will no longer be active. Therefore, the spirit goes on living in a totally independent state from the body. This is the event that is referred by the term '**DEATH**'.

The **astral body** (Spirit) that receives its energy from the brain is in a process of continuous contact with the brain at the same time as it helps the brain to store energy. This is a situation, which is similar to an automobile engine receiving

its energy from the accumulator and charging the accumulator at the same time.

If, for any reason, the spirit is separated from the body and does not return for a long period of time, then due to the lack of this energy, the brain will stop functioning. The event that we call as '**death**' then takes place.

* * *

Mainly, the memory is the information that is loaded onto this astral body. The brain receives the necessary information that it needs from here.

Should there be any functional disorder in the brain, then the brain will not be able to restore the information contained in this body of light. Therefore, the event we call 'forgetting' or '**not being able to remember**' takes place.

106

As for the case of the spirits who attract and repel one another,

There is also the case of the spirits who attract and repel each other. As a result of the astrological influences, the brains that produce the spirits manifest their production as four different frequencies. The early people have differentiated these frequencies as fire, earth, air and water.

* * *

When it is looked from outside, the appearance of the spirit body is very much like a hologram.

* * *

The appearance of the spirit is the same as the image that it had at the last instant when its connection with the body was cut off.

If a person who had lost his arm when he was at thirty dies at the age of fifty, his spirit will still have that arm as if it had not been lost at all. Because, the characteristics as well as the appearance that have been formed by the spirit will never become disoriented!

The qualities that belong to the **'SPIRIT Body'**, in other words the **'Astral Body'** are all produced by the brain. Therefore, the more we make use of our brain capacity extensively and the more we generate energy in this way; the more powerful SPIRIT we will have eventually. In fact, this is the reason why the following statement had been made: **'The world is the field of the Akhirat (The afterlife realm), so whatever you have planted here, you will reap it there'**.

107

The practices that are known as the **'Prayers'** are made solely for the purpose of improving the brain's development and as a result, make it more powerful so that these qualities can then be loaded to the spirit.

The anti magnetic energy produced by the brain and loaded onto the spirit will enable the spirit to save itself from the gravitational field of the earth and the sun. The religious terminology used to define this anti magnetic energy as **'NUR'** (The Light) in the old days.

The more **'NUR'** (The Light) the individual has, the more easily he will be saved from the hell. In other words, the more the individual manage to load energy onto his spirit, the more effortlessly he would be saved from these fields of attraction.

If however, the individual had neglected the process of loading this energy (during his lifetime in the world), then he would not be able to save himself from these powerful

centres of attraction and therefore he shall be imprisoned in that field of attraction eternally.

* * *

This particular structure, which is named as the spirit and carrying the individual conscious is by another definition known as the **'loaded astral body'**! Just like the case of the television waves that have been loaded with the images and the sound.

* * *

It has a lucid structure. It is beyond the limitations of time and place. It has the feature of being in several places at the same time.

108

* * *

The most important characteristic of the SPIRIT is that it directs itself towards the essence of everything that it confronts and searches for the origin and the truth of that particular thing. The **'conscious'** that we know is in this spirit and therefore all the qualities that belong to the conscious are perceived through this structure.

* * *

The bioelectric energy that is radiated by the brain keeps the cells of the body intact, in other words it maintains the wholeness of the body. In Sufism, this energy is referred as **'Hararat-ul Greezeyyah'** (The heat of the body).

3. THE BODY

This is the name of the structure, which is known to everybody as the **'human being'**.

It has several functions.

First of all, it enables the formation of the human conscious and the existence of the human being.

Secondly, the body supplies the bioelectric energy that is needed by the brain so that it can function. It transforms the food intake, which is the chemical energy into bioelectric energy and then gives it to the disposal of the brain. The brain then makes use of this bioelectric energy by transforming it into micro wave energy.

Thirdly, the magnetic energy that holds the body together as a whole and connecting the cells to each other is simply the result of the brain.

109

* * *

Because of their current structure, the cells that make up the body continue to live even after the **'human being'** who is wrapped around by the astral body leaves the biological body. However, after some time they disintegrate, because they simply lose all the features that keep them together. As a result of that, every single cell gets transformed and then joins with another compound whose structure resembles very much to its own.

* * *

The troubles, the pains, the sorrows and the aches all manifest themselves when any of the organs of the body cannot function in the usual manner due to an outer or inner effect. They are all felt by means of the pain centre in the brain.

If these centres in the brain malfunction and become inoperative, or if they are left out of use by means of

hypnosis or self-suggestion methods, then the human being will never feel any pain at all in his physical structure, namely his body.

* * *

The actual structure we call as the **'human being'** assumes that he is feeling these pains and sorrows all by himself, because at that moment the brain is busy with the task of suffering the pain and therefore it cannot perform its main functions. Because the real function of the brain is to bring the desires of the **'human being'** to the surface by means of using the physical structure. In other words, its duty is to act as an intermediary.

110

Whenever the brain cannot perform its usual routine functions due to the pain and the ache, then the human being feels suffering, because he cannot transfer the things that he desires to the material world. As it can be seen, this is the main reason why the human being suffers at times of pain and ache. However, as we are unable to grasp these fully, we think that the **'human'** is feeling all these pains and the aches, which in fact belongs to the physical body.

In reality, all the events that are attributed to the Spirit by those people who are at the material level are indeed attributed to 'the retarded spirits', 'the underdeveloped spirits' by the psychics (the mediums). These events all take place when the brain, which acts as an intermediary cannot work anymore in the usual order due to some unknown reason. Therefore, the human being cannot present his qualities to the material world and as a result the above mentioned situation takes place.

In other words, all those disorders that are related to the mind or linked with the mind or those that are thought to have a relation with the spirit as well as all those illnesses attributed to the human being manifest themselves, because the brain is either incapable of making enough progress or it is simply not functioning at all in the right order due to a pathological change.

* * *

The human being is able to transfer the talent and the capacity he has to the material world by the proportion of how much he could develop his brain power. Even though the development of the brain seems to be in the hands of the human being, the development may depend on various other internal and external conditions.

111

The issues that we consider as moral as well as the behaviour disorders that are against the morals of the society in general indicate that the brain is the main reason why these behaviour patterns occur, which could not be in favour of the benefits of both the individual and the society as a whole.

* * *

In cases where such moral disorders occur, the main reason for the changes in the moods and the behaviour of the people is that certain groups of cells in the related regions of the brain, which enable such qualities to pass on from the human to the body, cannot establish sufficient connections and therefore they cannot work in correct order.

Such disorders can be cured by means of the periphery surrounding the human being's structure, which in this particular context, we express by the phrase *Rouh-el-Hayvane* (The animal spirit). This is a structure, which is

made up of certain frequencies of light. Whenever the obstructions among certain group of cells in the brain are opened up by means of electrical current, those fibres in the brain where no communication has yet taken place could also be opened up in the same way so that the problem can be solved.

According to the religious belief, after death, the human being is responsible for those immoral behaviours he has manifested during his time in the world. However, the human being was certainly not created with such kind of behaviour; this is because he has a brain. It is for this reason human being is considered to be responsible, as he did not make any attempt to correct those disorders or put them in the right order during his time in the world.

112

Now, let us prove from the religious point of view once again that every human being has that perfection in their creations by the following verse from the glorious Koran:

‘WE HAVE INDEED CREATED MAN IN THE MOST PERFECT WAY’. (95-4)

Yes, the human being who has been created in the most perfect way has been limited first of all by his body of light, then with his biological body. Furthermore, in connection with the biological body, he has also been limited by the brain, which acts as an intermediary. Because of all these limitations, the human being is expected to manifest this perfection in this physical world. As a result, the human being is either subject to a reward to the extent to which he can perform these qualities or he will simply be subject to deserving the outcome of what he could not perform. As a matter of fact, the next verse that comes immediately after

the one mentioned above states the limitation of the human being by the physical factors after his *Khalq* (creation):

‘THEN WE REDUCED HIM (the human being) TO THE LOWEST OF THE LOW (We have put him within the limitations of the physical)’. (95-5)

As can be seen, in reality, every human being has been created with a perfect manner. However, he cannot manifest the perfection connected with his true nature in the physical world, because he is simply unable to perform the necessary advancements by his brain. Therefore, he is found responsible by his creator.

113

* * *

Yes, we had mentioned earlier that the main source for all types of behaviour, which we had regarded as **‘moral disorders’** are indeed connected with some pathological reasons, which we cannot fully identify.

Let us take a brief look at what *Dr. Sadi Irmak* says who is a famous Senior Professor of Medicine about the upper structure of the brain:

‘At this present time, our knowledge regarding the facts about the upper structure of the brain is as follows: In this upper part, there are 15 billions of cells. What this means is that these cells are in the outer layer of the upper brain. And among these cells, there are connections and very tiny fibres, which are all connected to the cells by means of these fibres. In addition to that physiological structure, there are also electrical connections.

Now, all these latest scientific research reveals that the human being can use only a very small amount of these

possible connections (in a life span of 90 years). It is by means of these connections that the group of cells really start to get working, which in return provides the individual with a contemplate mind and eventually allow him to manifest philosophical views.

However, at present, we know that even Einstein who is considered to be the most advanced human being has died by using only a few of his existing potentials relating to connecting fibres in his brain.

For the time being, the following assumptions are being made:

In future, man will become accustomed to making new combinations or the events shall force him to do so. In this manner, the human being will put forth new qualities.

114

Furthermore, when one day the communication between these 15 billions of cells is completed fully, then at that time, the human being would be much closer to divine wisdom and he would be in a position to become the shadow or the caliph of Allah. However, at this present moment, we can use only very few of these potentials. A person with an average mind uses only five or six percent of these qualities. In Shakespeare's case, this potential could go up to six thousand words, whereas in a villager's case, it can only be about 60 words. As can be seen, the number of words that are being used is connected with the number of these combinations. So, whoever has the ability to understand the meaning of more words in his lifetime, he is the one who has the ability to understand more, because he has more combinations than the others.

-Does every word express a combination?

-Yes. Each word is the expression of a combination. Each word is made up of a combination between different groups of cells.

-So, in other words, the development of the person depends on how much these fibres he could employ?

-Yes, anatomically speaking, everybody has these fibres; but the ability to use these fibres varies from person to person. Moreover, the reason why we could not utilize these fibres could simply be attributed to the fact that perhaps we have never ever been confronted with a situation whereby it would be a necessity for us to use them. It is a fact that the instincts become very weak indeed if they were not being used for a long time.

115

-So, when we refer to 'a person with a powerful imagination', do we mean a kind of person who can make use of these combinations extensively?

-Yes, this is one of the conclusions that the science has reached today! Most of them say that the individuals should get used to this as from the beginning of the early childhood years. This is the reason why educating the children and teaching them the activities pertaining to the upper brain has so many benefits.

So, this is the opinion of Senior Professor *Sadi Irmak* about the structure of the brain.

Because we are not in a position to publish a medical book here, we are not going to go into further detail about the properties of the brain.

However, we think very strongly that the statements delivered by a famous scientist from our country proving what we have said about the brain enable our readers to gain further insight in this particular field.

* * *

The structure that we have named and explained under the heading '1' here by the term '**human being**' is mentioned in the religious sources by the word '**Nafs**' (Soul) as well as the '**Human being**'.

In religious sources, the term referred by the phrase '**Rouh-UI-Haqiqah**' (The Truth of the spirit) is named by us as the '**Spirit**'; the term pointed out by the phrase '**Rouh-UI-Seyraanee**' (The Wandering Spirit) or the '**Nafs**' (Soul) however is known by us by the word '**human being**'. Furthermore, we are trying to describe the term that is named by the phrase '**Rouh-UI-Hayvane**' (Animal spirit) by the term '**astral body**'.

* * *

If the below passages that we will convey is read more carefully and taken into proper consideration in the light of the above explanations, it would then be seen that there is virtually no difference between what we have said and what the religious sources have informed us, as in the case of **Ibn Abbas**, who was a very famous scientist of his time.

The passages that you are going to read below are extracted from the commentaries of the late **Hamdi Yazır of Elmalı**; who wrote the book called '*Hak Dini Kur'an Dili*' (The True Religion / The Language of Koran), which has been published in nine volumes.

'Nafs' (Soul) is the actual essence, the real self of anything. It also means the soul and the heart. According to the religious set of laws, it is used as the power of the self, which corresponds to the extravagant desires as well as the anger. Here, it refers to the former. (Volume: / Page: 223).

'EVERY Nafs (Soul) will taste the death'.

Here, **Nafs** simply means the soul and the essence. However, some people have interpreted the term as **Baqa** (immortal soul), because tasting is simply an activity, which exist in everyday life. The term also implies that at the moment of tasting the pleasure, the one who tastes the pleasure is the eternal one; otherwise it would be impossible to grasp the meaning of pleasure fully.

117

Therefore, the meaning should be **'every soul will taste the death of his body'**.

This simply shows that the **Nafs** (Soul) is not the same as the body and it is not going to die with the death of the physical body. Therefore, the necessity for death is something which is meant for the physical living body and the spirits do not simply vanish away as they are all separate from the physical body (Volume: 2/Page: 1244).

According to a saying attributed to Hz. Ibn-I Abbas, the souls with the capacity of distinguishing the death has been mentioned as the souls that can think. However, the death had been stated as an event when the connection of the soul with the body has been cut off and hence its rule over the body is no longer active.

Hz. **Ibn-Al Abbas** had said that the son of Adam has a **Nafs** (Soul) and a spirit; the difference in between them is like the difference between the sun and its light. **Nafs** (Soul) is

something which is used along with reasoning, it is the ability to make the required distinction and the spirit is the thing through which you can breathe and act upon. With the incident known as death, both connections are cut off with the body. However, in the case of sleeping, only the **Nafs** (Soul) is considered to be dead. (Volume: 5- Page: 4127)

The **Azrael** (Angel of Death) separates the animal-like spirit from the physical body. This is the spirit, which gives life to the physical body. However, the humanly spirit, which is the order of the Lord possessing the power of thinking and has the ability to make distinction can only be taken away by *Allah*. Because it was given by *Allah* '*Wa nafahtu feehee min ruheey*' (I have blown into him of my spirit), then according to the judgment '*Allahu yatavaffal anfus*' only *Allah* makes the spirits die. (Volume: 5-Page: 4129)

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN



THE STRUCTURE AND THE CHARACTERISTICS OF THE JINNS

120

The term that is pointed out by the word **'JINNS'** are those beings who cannot be seen by the human eye in its true sense. However, at times owing to the special characteristics they possess, they are able to deliver some material like images to some people. This is a sort of being, which consist of two layers:

1. The kind of conscious being called as **'JINN'**, which we are unable to perceive.
2. **The hologram-like body of light**, which is called the **PERIPHERY**.

Now, let us examine these.

* * *

1. THE JINN:

These are conscious beings, which are invisible. In the *Koranal Karim*, they are described by the word **JINN**; among the ordinary people they are known as **'fairy'**, **'giant'**, **'ghost'**, **'JINN'**, **'elf'**, **'aliens'** and various other names are given to

them depending on the image they display. The people think that they are the SPIRITS of the dead people, so they try to establish contacts with them by calling them. Last but not least, these **conscious beings** introduce themselves as '**BEINGS FROM OUTER SPACE**' to those people whose level of knowledge is insufficient to be able to buy their stories.

As it was pointed out in earlier chapters, with respect to its **Nafs** (Soul), the **JINN** take its existence, its liveliness and its '**self**' conscious from the absolute '**SPIRIT**'.

* * *

121

With regards to the perfection it possesses within the consciousness, it is something which comes after the '**HUMAN BEING**' in the whole universe.

* * *

It is fully aware of its own conscious only after it can enfold itself in the periphery (the body of light). This, in a way can be considered as the birth of the **JINNS** with respect to their structures.

* * *

Their death in the absolute sense takes place right at the moment of the doom event, just like the human beings.

* * *

Their death in the simplest sense (i.e. the kind of death we know in general) takes place whenever their periphery (body of light) gets isolated from them at the end of their planned life span. The **JINNS** can understand the death of each other simply by finding out the loss of another jinni from their group.

* * *

Even though their life times are as long as the humans in reality, due to their structure and some properties they possess, this period could be as high as to the age of 700-1000 when compared with us. In actual fact, when their life span of 60-70 years with respect to their own unit of time is compared with our unit of time, we can see that it amounts to a life span of nearly 1000 years.

Due to their structural behaviour, they also possess quite sophisticated potentials and some of them are even more superior to the humans in terms of their conscious level. However, it is known for sure that the superior human being is much more superior to most superior **JINN**.

122

With respect to their character, they are weaker than the humans. They are more inclined to display such behaviours, which can be considered as negative. In general, they deal with such activities. In spite of this fact, there are also good ones among them as well as the ones who are more religious and even ones who are saints although this is very rare.

* * *

Their most significant characteristics and pleasure is to manipulate the weak points of the people, make individuals depend on them and make them do what they want, make them serve as well as worship them as if they were their servants.

* * *

The being that is known as the Satan and the activities that are attributed to this being are in fact all belong to the JINNS. Because Satanism is a quality pertaining to the JINNS!

Apart from the JINNS, there is no other being named as the Satan.

In the following chapters, we are going to talk about the characteristics of the **JINNS** more extensively. Therefore we are now leaving this subject here and move onto the subject of how they disguise themselves from the humans.

* * *

The **JINNS** are very active beings and they are not limited with the material world, therefore they are able to know the past events completely.

* * *

123

Although they are capable of knowing the information relating to the future events up to a certain extent, they cannot go into much detail due to the nature of their structures. In most cases, the information they give about the future is wrong.

* * *

2. THE PERIPHERY (The animal like spirit):

This has been made from the lights whose structure cannot be determined even by today's science. However, for those who have been assigned to work in this field, it will not be difficult to determine the structure of the periphery (the astral body) after working on it for some time.

* * *

It has the same qualities as the '**astral body of the human being**' which we have explained in the section about the '**human being**'.

* * *

Furthermore, it is not enfolded by something as in the case of body; so the **periphery** performs the functions of the body as well.

Should they desire, they are able to portray a physical image.

They are free from the limitations of time and space as we do.

They have the power and the speed to move quite freely to any place in the world or in the heavens at anytime they want.

So, how can the lives of the **JINNS** can be as long as one thousand years? Now, let us explain this.

124

* * *

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN

10



THE SCIENTIFIC EXPLANATION OF WHY THE LIVES OF THE JINNS ARE SO LONG; AND THEY HAVE VERY SHORT LIVES

126

As I have stated earlier, the lives of the **JINNS** are 10 to 13 times more than the average human life of 70 years, which means that their lives are between 700 and 1000 years long compared to us.

* * *

However, according to some experts working in this field, it is said that the lives of some **JINNS** cover a time period of nearly 1400 years long.

The reason why they have such a long life depends very much on their living conditions, which are more different than ours as well as to their speed, which is so much higher than that of the human beings.

Let us try to explain this as much as we can in the light of the progresses made in the positive sciences of today.

* * *

Nowadays, a startling concept named as **'making the real time shorter'** has been widely accepted by the advanced scientific world.

If we want to explain this matter in a simple way, we can say that: **'As the speed increases the time slows down. If however, the speed reaches a certain point, then the time stops'**.

The famous physician **Paul Langevin** had explained this matter in the following way:

127

'Imagine a vehicle with a man in it and assume for a moment that it is leaving the earth at a speed which is 1/20.000th of the speed of the light. This vehicle together with the man in it, are departing the world for a period of one year with respect to the time in the vehicle. After one year, the vehicle changes its direction and starts coming back to the earth.

In the end, when the man in the vehicle comes back to the earth, with respect to his unit of real time, two years have already been passed and he sees that during this time, the world has become two hundred years older and three generations have changed'.

This is because he has lived at a **very high speed** while in the vehicle.

* * *

Because the **JINNS** have such structures, which allow them to live continuously at high speeds, they are free from all physical limitations imposed on them.

Due to this high speed they live at, it seems to us that according to their own real time, they live a kind of life whose length is actually equal to 70 years of our life time.

However, with respect to our time dimension depending on our pace, the length of this period becomes about 700 years.

Let us assume that the human being lives an average life of 70 years with respect to our unit of time and the velocity of our dimension. Let us further assume that the life of the **JINN** is around 700 years in comparison to us. By means of a very simple calculation, we'll notice that their speed in the dimension they are living in is at least ten times more than our speeds at our present dimension.

128

I wonder if I have managed to explain the reason 'Why the JINNS live longer?' with respect to the human beings.

* * *

There are the beings named as the **JINNS** whose lives are 1000 years long with respect to us, but according to their real times, they still live 70 years.

As well as these, within the matter, in the nuclei of the atoms, there are pure energy interactions named as the 'pi' *mesons* that have a lifetime equal to TWO BILLIONTH OF ONE SECOND! (At the outside of the nucleus, the pi *mesons* decays into parts by themselves and form the 'u' *mesons*).

The 'u' *mesons* emerge during cosmic radiation. In most cases, they can travel in the atmosphere of the earth a few kilometres; sometimes the distance that they can travel is more than ten kilometres and afterwards they get transformed or in other words as the saying goes, they die.

All of these scientific developments we have explained above in a very simplified form have been made public; and right after this, the movie world in the United States has produced films based on these facts. Based on the scientific discovery that we have mentioned above, which in the scientific world is known as the 'LANGEVIN TRAVELLER', the film producers have produced the films '**The Planet of the Apes**' and '**Return to the Planet of the Apes**'.

Afterwards, many more films followed, which were all based on the same principle.

* * *

129

Now, let us examine how the **JINNS** have been mentioned in the *Koran-Al Karim*, together with the comments of some of the verses; the events that took place between the **JINNS** and *Hz. Rasool* (Messenger) and last of all the various opinions which are worthwhile to consider in the religious sources about the '**JINN**'.

* * *

11



‘JINNS’ ACCORDING TO KORAN AND HADITHS

130

In the preceding chapters, we had looked at the subject by explaining the structure of the ‘JINNS’ from a scientific point of view.

However, in this section let us try to present you with some of the information given in the *Koran-al Karim* about the ‘JINN’ and the facts that have reached us from the *Rasool* (Messenger) of Allah, in which there is absolutely no doubt whatsoever about their accuracy.

First of all, we are quoting some of the verses from the *Koran-Al Karim* about the ‘JINNS’. From the numbers given at the end of the verses, the first one shows the number of the chapter and the second one shows the number of the verse.

* * *

1. AND HE CREATED THE JINNS FROM FIRE FREE OF SMOKE. (55-15)

* * *

2. WE HAVE CREATED THE JINNS (before the humans) FROM the INTENSELY HOT POISONOUS FIRE –RADIATION-, WHICH DIFFUSES INTO THE PORES (to the matter). (15-27)

* * *

3. ON THAT DAY ALLAH WILL GATHER THEM TOGETHER AND SAY: ‘YOU; THE ASSEMBLY OF JINN! SO, YOU WANTED TO DOMINATE THE MAJORITY OF THE HUMANKIND (make them follow you and depend on you)! (6-128).

* * *

4. I HAVE CREATED THE JINNS AND THE MANKIND ONLY THAT THEY MAY SERVE ME (51-56).

* * *

5. (The speech on the doomsday): O, YOU THE COMPANY OF JINN AND MEN, IF YOU HAVE THE POWER TO PENETRATE INTO ALL THE REGIONS OF THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH THEN PENETRATE. YOU WILL NEVER PENETRATE THEM SAVE WITH (OUR) SANCTION!

A FLAME OF POISONOUS FIRE WILL BE SENT ON YOU, EVEN IF YOU CRY ‘HELP!’ YOU WILL NOT BE SAVED!’

AND WHEN THE HEAVEN SPLITS ASUNDER AND IT BECOMES ROSY RED LIKE MELTING AND BURNING OIL...

ON THAT DAY, NEITHER MAN NOR JINNI SHALL BE ASKED ABOUT HIS SIN (55/33-35-37-39).

* * *

6. CERTAINLY, I WILL FILL THE HELL WITH THE JINN AND THE MANKIND ALTOGETHER. (With all those who deserve it). (11/119)

7. AND THE WORD CONCERNING NATIONS OF THE JINNS AND THE HUMANKIND WHO PASSED AWAY BEFORE THEM HAD EFFECT FOR THEM (proved true against them). (41/25)

* * *

8. AND THEY HAVE IMAGINED BLOOD RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN ALLAH AND THE JINNS... CERTAINLY THE JINNS KNOW VERY WELL THAT THEY WILL BE BROUGHT BEFORE ALLAH (FOR JUDGEMENT). (37/158)

* * *

9. (I seek refuge in the Lord; the owner, the god of mankind) FROM THE JINNS AND THE HUMAN BEINGS. (114/6)

* * *

10. (On the day of judgement) 'YOU, THE ASSEMBLY OF JINN AND HUMANKIND! CAME THERE NOT UNTO YOU MESSENGERS FROM AMONGST YOU WHO TOLD YOU ABOUT MY SIGNS AND WARNED YOU OF THE MEETING OF THIS DAY?

THEY WILL SAY 'O, OUR LORD, WE BEAR WITNESS AGAINST OURSELVES'.

IT WAS THE LIFE OF THIS WORLD THAT DECEIVED THEM (this is why they are in such a state now). AND THEY TESTIFY AGAINST THEMSELVES THAT THEY WERE DISBELIEVERS. (Those people concealing the truth). (6/130)

* * *

11. REMEMBER THE TIME WHEN WE TURNED TOWARDS YOU A GROUP OF JINNS TO LISTEN TO THE KORAN...

SO, WHEN THEY STOOD IN THE PRESENCE THEREOF, THEY SAID (to each other) 'BE SILENT'; AND, WHEN IT WAS

FINISHED (the reading) THEY RETURNED TO THEIR PEOPLE TO WARN THEM...

THEY SAID 'O OUR PEOPLE!' WE HAVE HEARD A BOOK REVEALED AFTER MOSES, CONFIRMING WHAT CAME BEFORE IT, GUIDING TO THE TRUTH AND TO A RIGHT PATH...

'O; OUR PEOPLE!' ACCEPT THE ONE WHO INVITES YOU TO ALLAH. BELIEVE IN HIM SO THAT HE'LL FORGIVE SOME OF YOUR SINS AND SAVE YOU FROM A VERY GRIEVOUS PAIN. (46-29/30/31)

*** * ***

133

12. SAY (O MOHAMMAD): IT IS REVEALED UNTO ME THAT A COMPANY OF JINNS LISTENED (to me reading the Koran) AND THEY SAID (to one another):

'SURELY WE HAVE HEARD A MARVELLOUS KORAN THAT GUIDES UNTO RIGHTEOUSNESS AND UNTO THE TRUTH, SO WE BELIEVE IN IT! AND WE WILL NOT ASCRIBE ANY PARTNER UNTO OUR LORD...

AND INDEED, THERE WERE INDIVIDUALS AMONG MANKIND WHO TOOK SHELTER WITH PERSONS AMONG JINNS, SO THAT THEY INCREASED THEM (The JINNS who seek refuge) IN REVOLT AGAINST ALLAH...

AND WE PRIED INTO THE SECRETS OF HEAVEN (reach to the upper structure of the sky), BUT WE FOUND IT FILLED WITH STRONG GUARDS AND METEORS.

INDEED, WE USED TO SIT THERE IN HIGH PLACES TO STEAL A HEARING, BUT, WHOEVER LISTENS NOW WOULD FIND A METEOR (FLAMING FIRE) WAITING FOR HIM.

AND TO TELL THE TRUTH, WE KNOW NOT WHETHER AN EVIL IS MEANT FOR THOSE WHO ARE ON EARTH OR WHETHER THEIR LORD MEANS TO BRING THEM GOOD!

THERE ARE AMONG US SOME THAT ARE RIGHTEOUS AND SOME THAT ARE FAR FROM THAT. WE FOLLOW DIVERGENT PATHS.

AMONGST US THERE ARE SOME WHO HAVE SURRENDERED (WHO ARE MUSLIMS) AND THERE ARE THOSE WHO ARE UNJUST. AND WHOEVER SUBMITS (TO ALLAH), THEY HAVE TAKEN THE RIGHT PATH PURPOSEFULLY.

HOWEVER, AS FOR THOSE WHO ARE UNJUST, THEY ARE FIREWOOD FOR THE HELL. (72/1-15)

* * *

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN

12



THE EXPLANATION OF THE VERSES

Now, I would like to comment on the verses that we have quoted from the *Koran-al Karim* regarding the creatures named as **'JINN'** according to the order we have given above.

136

* * *

a) In the interpretation of the verse that we have given in section (1), the structure of the creature known as the **'JINN'** (which according to some in plural form known as **'JAN'**) is intended to be explained.

In general sense, for the structure of the human being it is being said that it is **'created from the earth'** because of its look and the way in which it is constructed physically. In the same way, the structure of the JINN is described as something which is created from **'smokeless fire'** or in other words, from **'light rays-radiation'**.

b) In the interpretation of the verse that I had given in number (2), the structure which is described here gives the same meaning as in the first one. Furthermore, a more detailed explanation is given on the structure while it is being

described as a poisonous fire like radiation, which would **diffuse into the pores** (in other words into the matter).

Let's see what the late **Hamdi Yazır** say on this subject:

'Hence, before the human being was created, in the beginning of the creation of the sun and the earth, he was in an unsettled state moving like waves; like fire or ELECTRICITY in an excited and agonized state. Also, from the fire that has the quality of interfering with all the matter mixing up all the objects some secret powers of life or some vital signs have been created which cannot be seen by the human eye. They have been named as 'JANN' (Volume: 6/ Page 4670).

137

c) If the interpretation that we have given at number (3) is examined thoroughly, it'll be evident that it explains a very important subject of our time. Because in this verse, *Allah Taala* is stating a very important characteristic that belong to the beings known by the name **'JINN'**. This characteristic is such that **'THE JINNS TAKE THE HUMANS UNDER THEIR DOMINATION, DECEIVE THE HUMANS AND MAKE THEM LIVE UNDER THEIR RULES'**.

Yes, as we have explained before, because of their structure, it is accepted that the JINNS are advantageous beings. Therefore, having this advantage means that they are successful in deceiving the humans with respect to their understanding up to a certain extent.

In other words, among the **JINNS**; deceiving the humans, dominating and taking them under their rule are all considered to be a success for them and in this way, they try to prove their superiority to each other.

Because we are going to explain **‘THE METHODS CARRIED OUT BY THE JINNS TO DECEIVE THE HUMANS AND HOW CAN THEY TAKE THEM UNDER THEIR DOMINATION’** in detail in the following chapters, here we only explain what the truth pointed out by this verse really is.

* * *

d) The interpretation of the verse that we have given in (4) explains that the **JINNS** are responsible to perform their duty of being in servitude to their creator just like the humans. In the verse it is stated very clearly that this is the main reason for their creation.

* * *

138

e) The interpretation given with the number (5) explains that on the day of judgement, like all the humans, the **JINNS** would also be responsible for what they have done during their time in the world and they would be punished if they disobey the orders of their creator. The verse also explains the horror and difficulty of the day of judgement by using plenty of metaphors.

* * *

f) In the interpretation given in (6), it is stated that like the human beings, those **JINNS** who have not obeyed the orders of their creator would suffer during their second creation in **‘Hell’**, where they will be subject to a punishment.

g) The interpretation of this verse given in the 7th article states that like all the humans, the **JINNS** too are being held responsible to follow various prophets. In spite of this rule, it is informed that if there are ones who do not obey this, then they are going to suffer. In the end, they will grasp the reality

whether or not they will be either punished or rewarded in some form.

So, this means that most probably prophets among the humans have come before for the **JINNS** as well and the **JINNS** have been told to follow these prophets since the ancient times.

h) A group among the humans had claimed that *Hazrat Isa (A.S.)* was the son of *Allah*. This verse states that in a similar way, a group from the **JINNS** have also claimed that there was a blood relation between some **JINNS** and *Allah*.

139

As it can be understood from the verse, while some **JINNS** were making such claims, some others knew that those claims were useless and one day they would be questioned because of these claims. This means that among the **JINNS**, there are ones who have been deviated from the truth as well as those who have directed themselves towards the ***Haqq***. (The Divine Truth)

i) In the ninth verse, it is pointed out that it is necessary to find shelter in *Allah* from the evil ones among the **JINNS** and from the evil ones among the humans. The verse clearly shows that only by doing so, those who have taken shelter would be protected from their harms.

j) The interpretation of the 10th verse mentions the situation of the **JINNS** and the humans on the day of judgement.

It is said that the prophets did also come to the **JINNS** and informed that they had duties towards their creator too; and that they were also responsible for acting within the scope of the proposals given by **ALLAH** and the *Rasools* (Messengers) of **ALLAH**. However, the majority of them do not listen to these warnings, which is emphasized by this verse!

As a matter of fact, on that day when they come face to face with the truth, they would understand the fact that what they've done was the cause for their disappointment and they would confess that they were guilty. Even in those times, as it has been explained by this verse that like the humans, the majority of the **JINNS** 'conceal' the truth and they too were unbelievers. It was desired that in this way, they would see the truth for themselves.

k) In the 11th verse, it is described very comprehensively how the **JINNS** had shown their faith when they have listened to the Koran for the first time and then went back to their communities so that they can invite them to the faith.

l) Finally, in the verses given by number 12 above, some important information about the general behaviour of the **JINNS** is explained. In this chapter, which in the *Koran-al Karim* is named as the '**Chapter of JINNS**', there are many interesting information about the **JINNS**. If all these information can be evaluated properly, the mankind will have the opportunity to learn important aspects about the **JINNS** to a great extent.

From the verses mentioned in the conversation between the **JINNS**, the first thing that is being understood is that some of them have become believers the moment they have heard the Koran.

As we have emphasized earlier, the second point which is being explained is that **SOME OF THE HUMAN BEINGS TAKE REFUGE IN THE JINNS AND THIS IN RETURN MAKE THEM EVEN MORE REBELLIOUS**. We shall try to tell more about the people who take refuge in the **JINNS** and contact with them in some way by various methods in the chapter named '**THE METHODS CARRIED OUT BY THE JINNS TO DECEIVE THE**

HUMANS AND HOW CAN THEY TAKE THEM UNDER THEIR DOMINATION’.

The third point that is being explained is about the existence of the **JINNS** in the universe; how they exist, their actions as well as their features on how they can perceive the knowledge and the things which burn them; in other words damage them. Again, we shall try to explain the necessary points about this subject in the following chapters.

The fourth point that this verse points out is that the **JINNS** can never ever know for certain what has been desired for humans, whether it is good or evil. It is also stated that all the information that will be given by them regarding this subject is far beyond the truth.

141

And finally the fifth point; like the humans there are different points of view among the **JINNS** too. There are those who obey the orders of their creator as well as those who do not obey and this point has been expressed specifically by the statements of the **JINNS** themselves.

* * *



SOME HADITHS ABOUT THE JINNS

Yes, after we have stated the relevant chapters telling about the **JINNS** in the *Koran-al Karim*, let us now examine the two **hadiths** (sayings) narrated from the Prophet *Aleyhesselaam* (Peace and blessings be upon him):

142

Sahih Bukhari (Volume 2, Book 23, Number: 422) Narrated by Anas:

At that time the **JINNS** were unable to receive any information from the heavens. Whenever they wanted to go up, the meteors (flames of fire) were sent onto them.

Therefore, the distinguished ones among them said:

-Most probably there happened something new and a veil occurred between you and the heavens! Go around the globe and let us understand what has happened.

So, the **JINNS** started their search all over the globe.

A group of **JINNS** going towards *Tihame* listened to the Koran read by the *Rasool* (Messenger) of *Allah* on his way to *Suq'Ukaz* (market of 'Ukaz) in the place called *Nakhla*, while

he was during the performance of the morning prayer with his companions. After they've listened they said:

-This is the event that has put a veil for the news from the heavens!

They immediately went back to their communities and said:

-‘O our people; verily we have heard a wonderful recital of Koran.’

It was right after this incident that Allah revealed the Chapter of the JINN and the *Rasool* (Messenger) of Allah then informed what the **JINNS** have said in that chapter.

* * *

The second **hadith** (saying) which is narrated from *Ibn-i Masood Radiallahu anhu* (may Allah be pleased with him) is as follows:

The *Rasool* (Messenger) of Allah said:

-I have been ordered to read the Koran to the **JINNS** so who will come with me? he asked.

Everybody was silent. He asked for the second time. There was silence again. He asked for the third time again and this time I replied:

-Me, **Abdullah!** O, *Rasool* (Messenger) of Allah I'll follow you.

So, we stood up and walked together.

When we came to place called *Hacune* near *Düb Shib*, he drew a line in front of me and said:

-Do not go beyond this!

Then, he went towards *Hacune*.

They immediately flew over him like partridges. They resembled the 'Zud' group. They were playing their tambourines similar to the way the women played theirs.

In the end, they surrounded him and he was lost from my eye sight. I stood up immediately from where I was sitting. At that moment, he made a gesture with his hand telling me to 'sit down'. Then, he started to read the Koran. His voice was becoming higher and higher as he went on reading. They were all stuck to the ground in such a way that I was able to hear their voices, but I could not see them.

Afterwards, when the *Rasool* (Messenger) of *Allah* came near me, he asked:

-You wanted to come, didn't you?

I answered:

-Yes, O *Rasool* (Messenger) of *Allah*.

He answered:

-It wasn't necessary for you! They are the **JINNS!** They came here to listen to the Koran. After that they went back to their community so that they can warn them.

* * *

14



THE CONCLUSIONS DRAWN FROM THE HADITHS

146

Let us now examine the **hadiths** (sayings) that explain the events between *Hz.Mohammad Aleyhesselaam* (Peace and blessings be upon him) and the **JINNS**, which in return would enable us to see the conclusions drawn from them:

1. In general, the **JINNS** could ascend to the upper levels (we shall try to explain what really is emphasized by the statement 'the upper levels' at a later stage) of the heavens and they could gain knowledge of what was going to happen in the future.
2. After the revelation of the Koran or to put it more correctly, when the duty of **Risalat**; in other words the Prophecy was passed onto *Hz.Mohammad Aleyhesselaam* (Peace and blessings be upon him) and after he had started this duty, the **JINNS** were prevented from receiving (Peace and blessings be upon him) information from the upper levels of the heavens.

3. From this, it can be deduced that they could not perceive the whole globe at the same time and to be able to do this they would need more time.

4. The **JINNS** are being prevented from obtaining information from the upper levels of the heavens by such objects which are known as **Shihab** (or meteors – objects that could fall and burn as they come into contact with the atmosphere).

5. They can make themselves denser and have a more solid look.

6. Some among them may be given the duty of warning their community.

7. They can make kinds of voices, which can be heard by the human ear.

* * *

15



THE OPINIONS OF SOME ISLAMIC SCHOLARS

148

Let us now present below the opinion of *Imam Abu'l-Hasan al-Ash'ari* about the **JINNS** who is one of the leading Islamic scholars lived between the years 260-234 according to the Islamic *Hejrah* (migration) lunar calendar:

-The life that manifests itself in a big body can also become manifested in a single particle. With regards to its truth, life does not depend on the nature of the materials or the objects, but it is the command of the Lord. For this reason, it is possible that in a single particle huge objects may become manifested.

The eye can see an object that other people cannot see in spite of the fact that there is no visible physical body. Moreover, in order to see, there is no need to have an eye. If *Allah Taala* wishes so, then the human being can see with his finger tip even when his eyes are shut.

Similarly, the **JINNS** can either be seen or not in any particle of an object as a source of life that does not possess a body.

Apart from this, those who are like **JINNS** may also have a physical body of their own. However, it is not necessary for us to see all the bodies and it is an obvious fact that we cannot see all the particles in whatever we see. Therefore, while there are many beings with different natures in front of our eyes we may not see them all. As a matter of fact, we cannot see the microbes by an ordinary look, similarly there can be tiny particles of light in the air, which we cannot simply determine with our senses. Some of these maybe far from us or close to us and some may be high or some may be low.

* * *

149

So far, we have not managed to discover all the physical and material powers. Therefore, from the spiritual and the physical point of view, it is not correct for a human being with a rational mind that the existence of the beings that have been veiled by our five senses should be denied.

Feyruz Abadi, one of the Islamic scholars gives the following summarized information about the **JINN** in his book called '**Besair**' (Wisdom):

'There are two opinions for the **JINN**': (Obviously, he is speaking for those days).

1. The **JINN** is the name given to the veiled spiritual beings, which cannot be determined by the five senses of the human being. It corresponds to the word '**ins**' (humans). Thus, by this meaning, the word covers the angels, the devils and the **JINNS**. Therefore, there is a special and a general relation between the angel and the **JINN**.

Every angel is a **JINNI**; but a **JINNI** is not an angel.

2. The **JINN** is the name given to some of the spiritual (bodiless) beings. In actual fact, the spiritual beings consist of three groups:

- a) The good (beneficial) ones, which are the angels.
- b) The bad (harmful) ones, which are the devils.
- c) Those in between who have both the good and the bad aspects, these are precisely the **JINN** community. (*Hak Dini–‘The True Religion’*-Volume: 3, Page: 2030)

* * *

As we shall explain it later, let us state what the words **‘SHIHAB’** and **‘SEMUM’** mean in the Arabic Language since it is closely related to our subject based on the commentary of the late Hamdi Yazır.

150

* * *

In the dictionary, **‘SHIHAB’** means the **‘flame of fire’**.

* * *

The meaning of the word **‘SAMM’** derives from **‘SEMM’**, which is poison and it is inherent in the word **‘SEMMUM’**. The **‘SEMM’** means poison and **SEMMILHAYAT** means **‘tiny pores’**. As a matter of fact, the **hidden tiny pores** in the body from which sweat comes out and air goes in are called as **‘masamma’**, which is the singular form. The plural form is called **masamm** or **masemmat**.

The fact that **JANN** (or the Jinn) has been created from the **‘POISONOUS FIRE’** shows that the **JINN** and the **SATAN** have the capacity to penetrate into the hidden pores of the human being and poison him (Volume: 4, Page: 3059)

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN



THE STATE OF THE MUSLIMS WHO DENY THE JINNS

152

As it can be understood from the Chapters that we have been given up to now from the *Koran-al Karim* and the **hadiths** (sayings), **the religion of Islam makes it compulsory for the Muslims TO HAVE FAITH IN THE JINNS.**

It can also be noticed in the Koran that at least in 12 different places, very long explanations have been given in detail about the **JINNS**, the things that they've done to the humans and their intentions.

Denying any of these chapters from the *Koran-al Karim* is the same as DENYING THE KORAN.

In other words, 'DENYING THE JINNS' is the same as denying the Koran, which at the same time is the refusal of the fact that it has come from the dimension of ALLAH!

Moreover, in the religion of Islam, all scholars who have attained a certain spiritual station fully agree that if anyone does not accept even a single chapter in the Koran then this would mean that they are in a state of total denial.

Just think; an individual claiming that he is a Muslim who has faith in *Allah*, the *Rasool* (Messenger) of *Allah* and the Koran. Then he denies the **JINNS** by giving false interpretations about the verses on this matter and claims that '**the beings that are known as JINNS**' are in fact microbes.

Of course, even if they say that they are Muslims, there is an important reason for those people who deny the **JINNS** or deviate themselves in some way from this reality, which would be regarded as a denial in its own right.

* * *

153

In reality, the reason why people with such nature deny the **JINNS** is purely attributed to the **JINNS!**

If we take a closer look at the lives of those who deny the **JINNS** or deviate themselves from this reality, which would mean denial, we can see that these people are in fact '**in connection with the JINNS**' unknowingly. In other words, they are being ruled by the **JINNS** without being aware of this fact.

However, some of them are aware of this situation. In spite of this fact, they still deny the **JINNS** or adhere themselves to false opinions consciously, so that others will not be able to discover what they did with the **JINNS** to see if they have benefited from them.

On the other hand, some of them have become obsessed by the **JINNS** even without being aware of it. So, by the inspirations that they get from the **JINNS**, they deny their existence or they diverge from the truth and choose to mislead themselves by adhering to false opinions by saying that '**the JINNS are microbes**'.

* * *

It is most certain that those who deny the **JINNS** or make comments about them, which would mean denial, either do not have sufficient knowledge about the religion of Islam or they have definitely been obsessed by the **JINNS** without knowing.

* * *



THE DECEPTION AND THE DOMINATION METHODS OF THE JINNS

156

As we have stated before, due to the advantage of their structure, the **JINNS** could establish connections with the humans in various ways and most of the time they can make the humans obey them as a result of this connection!

However, as we have already discovered in many situations, the humans hide their positions as they want to save themselves from the trouble of being ashamed. They do not want to face with any problems and they do not want to be ridiculed by the others. So, they never mention about their connection with the **JINNS**. In most cases, they deny the positions that they are in, because whenever these relations become apparent, they would feel ashamed in their communities. In addition to that, they would be leading themselves to a disastrous situation by the advice given to them by the people who do not know the methods of dealing with the **JINNS**.

As we have stated before, the following verse in the *Koran-al Karim* points out very clearly how the **JINNS** possess the humans and use them like their robots:

ON THAT DAY ALLAH WILL GATHER THEM TOGETHER AND SAY:

-YOU; THE COMMUNITY OF JINN! SO, YOU WANTED TO DOMINATE THE MAJORITY OF THE HUMANKIND! (6-128).

The creatures that are named as **JINN** and cannot be determined by the five senses of the human being try to possess the people in two ways:

- a) By introducing themselves openly to the person in question.**
- b) Without letting themselves known to the person in question and never making them fully aware.**

157

* * *

When they declare themselves openly to the person with whom they are in contact with, they do it in two ways:

- a) They give the impression that they are working towards achieving Islamic objectives.**
- b) By giving the impression that they are working solely for the objectives other than those connected with the religion of Islam.**

* * *

These two methods are still valid whenever they try to establish a contact with a person without letting them know. So, they drag the individual to their path either:

- a) By exploiting the warm feelings that the person has towards Islam or,**

b) By proposing humanistic ideas depending on the person's religion or his understanding of the religion.

* * *

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN



HOW DO JINNS ESTABLISH CONTACT BY INTRODUCING THEMSELVES

160

This is a type of **JINN-Human** relation whereby the **JINNS** generally establish their contacts with the humans by possessing them with force.

* * *

This is mostly experienced by the women.

* * *

The **JINNS** establish their connections especially with nervous women following the time they've given birth to a baby or during illnesses accompanied by high fever or during accidents. This is because during those periods, the brain is busy with the extra activity taking place in various parts of the body and therefore the human being simply cannot have control over the brain's activity in a desired manner. As a result, the **JINN** takes over the control in the related part of the brain at that particular weak moment by becoming visible to the person in whatever form he likes and force him to do whatever he desires.

Sometimes this act of forcing can take place by the impulses that the **JINN** sends to the part of the brain that is connected with the faculty of pain centre and making the individual feel that pain. At other times, by triggering the centre of fear, **JINN** could make the individual even more frightened so that the individual can do whatever they desire.

Most probably, what is simply being carried out is that they send out light signals to a certain centre in the individual's brain and therefore create the desired effect.

* * *

161

As we shall explain in the following chapters, whenever the mediums go into a trance, they experience exactly the same situation. This is the reason why they are asked to relax and let themselves loose in the first place. Here, the objective is to decrease the control that the human being has over his brain. In this way, the **JINN** desired to be contacted would be able to possess the individual more easily.

* * *

In such connections, the women particularly say that the **JINN** becoming visible before their eyes appear as a very handsome man.

The **JINNS** who establish contacts openly with the women or the young girls usually marry them and have sexual intercourse with them.

During these connections, the women see the **JINN** as a solid object and have a sexual contact with it as if it were a male from the human kind. However, as the **JINN** do not have a tangible solid physical body, then the following question comes to the minds:

-How on earth the **JINN** who cannot even be transformed into a complete physical object can manage to satisfy a woman belonging to the human race during this connection?

Under such conditions, the **JINN** stimulate the part of sexuality centre in the brain of the woman involved and cause her to get satisfaction. As a matter of fact, all the scientists who work in the field of physiology know very well that when an electro shock is applied to a certain centre of the brain, it is possible to make that person do whatever you want.

In fact, these are just the sort of contacts, which do not only take place between a woman from the human kind and a man from the class of **JINNS**. There can also be a sexual relation between a woman from the class of **JINNS** and a man from the humankind as well. Moreover, it is also said that the **JINNS** have homosexual contacts too.

162

In all of these connections, the point which is usually discovered in common is that a member of the **JINN** makes a contact with a human being only for the purpose of fulfilling his selfish desires on the human being forcefully. In general, the people who have been forced into such positions do complain about this. These events take place without consent of the individual.

* * *

In such cases, especially when there is a connection between a woman from the human kind and a man from the class of **JINNS**, the woman isolates herself from the world outside and most of the time she wants to stay in a room.

If the **JINN** with whom she has contact with happen to be an atheist, or to put it in a religious context; if the **JINN** is an inferior kind, then he stops that woman from taking a bath.

However, in some cases, the opposite of this takes place as the woman wants to take a bath all the time. In some of these cases, even more interesting things happen. For example, when the woman is left alone soon after her contact with the **JINN**, she goes into a state of shock because of this unpleasant situation that she had experienced while she was alone and as a result, she stays in the bathroom for hours and carries on washing herself.

* * *

163

Nowadays, the medical science cannot diagnose these cases and therefore they try to cure the patient by means of applying electro-shock for the sake of the positive science. However, in these cases too, hardly any result can be obtained. At the end of the electro-shock process, there is a disorder and an agitation in the brain cells of the individual causing a state of calmness. This of course does not mean that the person has been cured, it is because of the disturbance that she had due to the shock.

Generally, it is seen that the people who have good healing powers can correct such situations by way of prayers blown upon to the depressed person. We shall try to explain this matter scientifically in the chapter called **‘the effect of making prayers on the JINNS’**.

We had pointed out that the way **JINNS** establish relations with the humans openly or by making them aware does take place in two ways.

* * *

If the **JINN** wish to establish a relation in the manner that we have described above, then this situation could be explained under efforts they carry out towards fulfilling such objectives, which are not connected with the religion of Islam. In fact, these are such circumstances, which indicate that the **JINN** establishing the contact is known as an **‘inferior’** kind.

Apart from all these kind of relations we described above, it is also a well known fact that in many circumstances, they can make the humans lead a miserable life by force, making them live with dirt and filth.

In order to deceive the people more easily and dominate them, the very first method preferred by the **JINNS** is to cut their connections off with the knowledge coming from the Islamic sources and give them suggestions in this manner since the most extensive knowledge about the **JINNS** is found in the Islamic sources.

Since the humans cannot access this information and obtain sufficient knowledge about the **JINNS**, the **JINNS** in return gain an important advantage over humans so that they could deceive them more easily.

A person who is totally unaware of the danger he will face with would indeed not be able to take any precautions against it!

For this reason, the **JINNS** do not want the humans to know about themselves, so that they no precautions can be taken against them!

Abd Al-Karim Al-Jili, who is among the great saints and the author of the book called **‘THE PERFECT MAN’** (*Insan-e-Kamil*) writes in the chapter **‘possessors of the seven levels of earth’** that the **JINNS** living within the atmosphere of the

world consist of seven classes. He says that the weakest among these are the ones who live in the second level of earth and they influence the humans by blocking their mechanism of contemplation. The most evil ones named as the demon live in the fifth level of earth (the skies of the earth consists of seven layers, going up from the first to the seventh). For those who live in the sixth and the seventh layers, it is impossible for any of the human beings to make them listen to what they say.

165

The most evil activity carried out by the **JINNS** in the Islamic society which we live in is that they seem to give the impression that they were from the **Haqq** (The Divine Truth), but in fact they simply lead people astray from the truth.

The **JINNS** can move humans away from Islam in various ways simply by appearing to them as if they were from the **Haqq** (The Divine Truth).

The lowest level is the fortune telling and dealing with black magic by disguising under a religious title such as a **Hodja** (Religious Cleric).

Any person forming a relation with the **JINN** either by marriage or by some other means can give information about the past simply by using this being which s/he has connections with. In this manner, they pretend to give some clues about the future based on probabilistic calculations.

In actual fact, most of the things that are said about the future will turn out to be wrong. According to Islam, there is no such thing as for fortune telling or witchcraft in the religion. This is an important misdeed. This is a great responsibility. It is one of the greatest sins!

Unfortunately, in our times, lots of people are running after false **Mursheeds** (Spiritual Masters) who have got connections with the **JINNS** and think of themselves as saints. In this manner, those who are running after them are indeed wasting their precious lives for nothing.

In order to have the ability to enlighten one's environment, first of all it is necessary to possess Islam's **Tawheed** (Oneness) and **Aqaaed** (The Creed) sciences. It is also necessary to know all the points stated in **Amantu** (I Believe) in detail so that there is sufficient knowledge, which will enable one to answer all the questions on this subject.

However, nowadays, there are the false *Mahdis* (The Guided Ones) and the **Mursheeds** (Spiritual Masters) everywhere in almost every city. These are individuals with false titles and by the inspirations they get from the **JINNS**, they lead those poor people to the wrong ways by telling them superstitions, which do not have any relation with science.

166

* * *

Sufism, in the first place is the fight with the **Nafs** (Soul)! This has been explained in the statement of *H. Rasool* (Messenger) of *Allah* in which he said 'We are returning from the small victory towards the big victory'.

As this is face of the truth, countless people who claim to be the followers of Sufism and their super **Mursheeds** (Spiritual Masters) cannot live without smoking a CIGARETTE! If a person cannot fight with his ego even for the sake of a single cigarette, then how on earth can he struggle on more delicate matters and become a saint.

As it has been mentioned in most of the books about the **JINNS**, the main food of the **JINNS** is the smell! The smell that the **JINNS** like most is the smell of the cigarette.

Whenever they find someone with a habit of smoking, then they do not leave him/her easily and they keep following him. The **JINNS** are the most important factor for the increased smoking addiction in a person.

* * *

167

Whenever the **JINNS** find a person with a smoking addiction, they immediately send a signal to his brain, which would put him under a stressful condition. Due to this irritation, the individual lights a cigarette immediately.

Soon after he starts exhaling the smoke of the cigarette, he feels more relaxed and the frustration goes away! The reason for this is that the **JINN** nearby him have started to feed from that smoke and therefore sending of those frustrating impulses has been stopped. In this manner, the individual finishes his cigarette and feels relaxed for a certain time.

This continues until such time that the **JINN** nearby his side want more of the smell of the cigarette and sends an impulse to the brain of the individual again, which would then make him even more depressed. As a result, the person lights another cigarette without any self-control whatsoever and this process goes on and on.

If you ever go near a **Hodja** (Religious Cleric) or a **Mursheed** (Spiritual Master) or a **Ghaus** (Spiritual Helper) who smokes, then start repeating the following prayers from the *Koran-al Karim* immediately. These are as follows: The Chapter of *Sad* (The Letter Sad), the verse 41, the Chapter of *Al-Mumenoon*

(The Believers), the verse 97-98 and the Chapter of *As-Saffat* (Those Ranging in Ranks), the verse 7.

You'll notice that as you continue repeating these prayers, your brain will radiate certain waves, which will then disconnect the relation between the **JINN** and the individual. As a result of this activity, you'll witness some unstable behaviour patterns and also hear unsuitable words from that person.

Moreover, in those sessions where they get in touch with the spirits, if you repeat this prayer near the **Hodjas** (Religious Clerics) who are dealing with the **JINNS** and who are fortune tellers you'll observe this and you'll definitely believe in what we have said. Yes, I am giving these verses below in their transliteration forms, as they are pronounced:

'Rabbi anniy massaniyyash shaiytanu binusbiyn wa adhaba. Rabbi auwzu biqa min hamasatish shaiyateyney wa auwzu biqa rabbi an yakhdhurun. Wa hifzan min kulli shaiytanin maarid'.

Sayyid Abdul Azeez Ad Dabbagh had written centuries ago in his book **'AL IBREEZ'** (Pure Gold) that **'The Saints had never SMOKED'**. He also says that the saints who are the members of **'The Supreme Council of Saints'** never smoked for sure.

Although the group of saints who are named as the Rijal-ul-Ghaib (The Spiritual Men of the Unknown) never smoked, on the contrary, our studies reveal that almost all the people who have mixed with **JINNS** are addicted to smoking.

This is the reason why the first precaution that should be taken to keep away from these invisible beings called **JINNS** is to refrain from smoking.

* * *

In Sufism, the individuals who are supposed to be at a certain rank can be best understood if they really belong to such a rank by considering the following main subjects that are among the teachings of Sufism.

a- WAHDAT (Oneness)

b- QADAR (Destiny).

Those people who are under the influence of the **JINNS** without being aware and assume that they are saints or **mursheeds**, as well as those people who have relations with the **JINNS** intentionally try not to go into these subjects.

169

Because of their weak minds, the **JINNS** try to keep themselves as well as the humans whom they dominate away from these two subjects.

In order to keep the humans away from these two facts mentioned above, which would teach the humans more about Sufism, both the **JINNS** and those who are being dominated by them; either purposefully or without knowing, keep them busy with all kinds of knowledge other than Sufism.

Wherever you meet with someone who tries to keep you away from the knowledge of the '**Oneness**' and the '**Destiny**', you can be sure that the traces of the **JINNS** do exist in that person.

The main reason why the **JINNS** want to keep the humans away from these two sciences is that their knowledge is very insufficient in these subjects meaning that their falsehood would eventually become evident very easily. The second is that with the help of these two sciences, there is a big chance

that the humans could save themselves from the god that they have created in their imaginations and they will soon be able to realize what 'ALLAH' really is. Therefore, they have a great chance to become the true possessors of **Tawheed** (Oneness).

Of course, the **JINNS** do not welcome such a situation. This is because the sole objective of the '**JINNS**' who are made '**FROM THE SEED OF THE SATAN**' is that they have a particular interest to lead the people astray from the truth and eventually make them against ALLAH!

The harm that the JINNS could exercise on a society accepting Islam is to inspire it with activities which would deprive members of this society of the spiritual energy that they would need in the realm of the afterlife. So, instead of directing themselves to the truth, the possessors of Sufism are harmed by the JINNS in such a way that they end up spending their time dealing with details rather than with the truth itself.

170

Having good manners, trying to avoid what has been forbidden, and performing the obligatory prayers are all subjects pertaining to the Shariat (Islamic Law) and not Sufism!

If a person spends his time with matters concerning Shariat during the gatherings of Sufism, then this simply shows that he has not yet started to be interested in Sufism.

Sufism starts with practices and studies based on subjects connected with the Shariat, which are simply carried out for the purpose of "ATTAINING THE SECRET OF ONENESS." These can all be investigated through relevant publications and through experts among the people.

* * *

Here, we are referring to the JINNS who are Muslims in general.

They supply some various and simple religious information to human beings. It is possible that most of the information they supply is usually true. In general, such situations are commonplace in regions where there has been a lack of knowledge about the religion. It is also possible that in some households people with such qualities are common.

171

However, as we have already mentioned in the above two paragraphs, people who make contact with the JINNS do not say anything about this fact, as the world outside knows nothing about the JINNS whatsoever. Furthermore, those who contact the JINNS also feel that people who are talking about them in this way are simply fooling them. Therefore, it becomes very difficult to determine the nature of these events.

* * *

Contrary to these unusual events, the most common type of JINN-man relation is the one in which the JINNS establish connections with people and dominate them in several ways without actually making themselves known.

Let us now examine how the JINNS do so and they establish these relations with people without making themselves known to them.

* * *



JINNS DOMINATING HUMAN BEINGS WITHOUT MAKING THEM AWARE

172

As we have said before briefly, the way that the **JINNS** could manage to establish relations with human beings and tie those to themselves fall into the two following categories:

- a) Attacking the religion of Islam;
- b) Giving false impressions which seem to be directing the people toward humanistic goals.

The most obvious difference between these two approaches is that the first argument does not accept **REINCARNATION** (that is, coming back to this world several times in different forms), whereas the second argument acknowledges this fact.

Because we shall see the subject of reincarnation in the following chapters in more detail, I am not placing too much emphasis on it now. Here, the emphasis is on the methods of deception practised by the **JINNS**.

First, let us examine how they can deceive and establish connections with people through attacking Islamic objectives.

In such cases, the JINN-human relations fall into two types:

- 1) Without letting the people know at all about their existence.
- 2) With informing people about their existence, but under a different name and in a different form.

First, let us take a look at how they can connect with people without making these people aware of the connection, and how they can succeed in being a dominating power and actually possess them.

* * *

173

The most important characteristic of these people who comes under this category is the fact that they do not know for certain that they are aware of having a connection with a **JINNI**. They simply assume that all these extraordinary experiences that they possess is the result of their own superior qualities. For this reason, they live their lives by looking down upon all the individuals in such a manner that in some cases, they even show qualities of artificial modesty.

In one of his books *Muhyiddin Ibn 'Arabi* has stated that the most important characteristics of such people is that even though they do not have sufficient knowledge or own any valuable works, they still think of themselves as superior. They do not like anyone else and therefore they spread around the belief that they are the most superior in all cases.

* * *

In addition to this, the second most important characteristic of those people who have a connection with such a **JINNI** is that they do not accept the existence of the **JINNS!**

They try to deny the existence of the **JINNS** simply by giving definitions that ‘**There is no such thing as the JINN; the JINNS are the microbes**’ or something similar to that context.

Even though they say that this is what they believe in, the truth is that they do not accept the **JINNS** as a whole because of the ideas that have been imposed upon them again by the **JINNS**. The reason behind this is that if the **JINNS** do not make these people deny their existence by imposing on them various ideas then there is the possibility that the subject person may become doubtful about his state and eventually discover the existence of the **JINNS**! This would indeed disturb the plans of the **JINNS**!

It is purely for this reason that all those people who have got connections with the **JINNS** never accept the existence of the **JINNS** and as a result, they give such explanations in this fashion.

* * *

So, in what ways do the **JINNS** manage to possess such individuals?

* * *

Those **JINNS** that could dominate human beings could either be an ordinary type; a normal **JINN** or it may be one of their superior ones such as their leaders. It may also be one of those who are well known in their group.

* * *

A **JINNI** generally chooses a person who has a brain capacity that is capable of communicating starting from his teenage years and then puts him among those ones who are already been dominated by this **JINNI**! This situation usually occurs in

people who are between the ages of 15-24. However, in some cases this choice could also be made at much younger ages.

* * *

As soon as the choice has been made and the subject individual to be dominated is determined by the **JINN**, the next step is to attach him to himself completely.

To be able to achieve this purpose, the **JINN** disguise himself to the individual as a well known, respectable religious character and then go into his dream, only to impose on the individual the idea that he is going to be a great, important person.

175

This particular person that the **JINN** have disguised under could either be '*Hazrat Khalid*' or '*Mawlana Jelaleddin Rumi*' or '*Muhyiddin Ibn 'Arabi*' or any other saint known in the society as '*Baba*' (father).

As a result of all these visions that are being shown to the individual gradually, that young person; whether male or female believes that s/he really is going to be a very great person.

* * *

Sometimes s/he wants to have something and his wish is immediately granted by that **JINNI**.

He thinks that *Allah* has made his wish become true; whereas it has been granted by his **JINN**.

Whenever he is about to sit an exam, he has been assisted in that examination.

While he is talking to someone, he would gain superiority over the other person owing to the pressure that the **JINN** exert on that person. It looks as if the other people simply cannot resist him at all.

So, in this way, he starts to improve day by day.

* * *

As the time goes on, he gradually starts to feel lots of changes in his condition. He has been informed with some minor events that are going to take place in the future. If he is not aware of the fact that he has got a connection with the **JINNS**, he assumes that all these incidents take place by the faculty of his sixth sense. He may have instant knowledge about a particular event which might occur in another place at the same moment.

176

He makes a request to solve somebody's problem and that demand is immediately granted by his **JINNI**. Because he assumes himself as a great man, it is thought that his request is actually being granted by the help of *Allah* as he is a man with such a great wisdom.

* * *

In the end, he claims that he has finally become an expert; a man with a great intellect in a certain field. He thinks that he no longer needs anybody else! He sees himself more superior than the others! From this point onwards, that person simply acts in accordance with the inspirations that he sense within himself.

Should he choose himself with a profession in the field of theology for instance, he would then claim that he is the greatest religious man who has ever come in this field.

If however, he is one of those who happen to have a private occupation, then he spreads around the thought that he is the greatest saint of his time, namely the *Qutub-ul-Aqtaab* (Highest Ranking Saint).

He may cure hopeless ailments and diseases by using very simple medications; he may also make a diagnosis that could not be made before straight away and starts to make paralysed people move and walk!

If he is in other professions, he can still achieve some extraordinary things in these fields. All of these make him very famous and as a result, he can gather thousands of people around himself.

177

* * *

Of course, those who have extensive knowledge about these matters could easily grasp the condition that he is in straight away. However, those who do not believe in such things may accuse him of being a charlatan, a magician or as someone dealing with witchcraft. On the contrary, those who believe in him treat him as the greatest saint or even consider him being at the same level with the *Mahdi* (The Guided One) or as *Isa Aleyhesselaam* (May Allah's peace be upon Jesus).

At this point, the greatest pleasure and joy belongs to the **JINN** who had successfully managed to attach him to himself.

Because, by means of that individual's **JINN**, thousands of others has been connected to the assembly of the **JINNS**, so that they can start to do whatever they want to those people. Therefore, in order to strengthen the position of that certain individual, they can even go into the dreams of some people for the purpose of establishing close relations with that person and suggest them to help him.

* * *

At the same time, they can provide religious information to that particular individual and present him as a great religious man. So, those who are not aware of this choose him as a religious leader for themselves.

* * *

From now on, that person starts to spread around some *fatwa* (religious rulings) all by himself without making any reference to Islamic sources. He gives his verdict on some of the *Halaal* (permissible) things in Islam as if they were *Haraam* (prohibited). Furthermore, he starts to impose these ideas upon others in such a way so as to make others believe that he is a leader who is bringing along new rulings which are suitable with that time period.

178

* * *

As a result, that individual does eventually gather lots of people around him and starts to live as if he were a *mujaddid* (reformer) and a *mujtahid* (Islamic scholar). Meanwhile, the **JINN** who has obsessed and made a connection with him establish its supremacy over him! The subject **JINN** who have finally been successful in doing this become proud among his kinds and goes into a kind of competition with the **JINNS** of its kind who are doing the same thing.

The greatest example of this situation in the world mentioned above by us comes from *Mirza Ghulam Ahmad Qadian* who had established the *Qadian* sect.

Even though there are such people in Turkey, we are not going to place an emphasis on them here and instead we will

illustrate the point we have mentioned above by an example and taking some sections from *Ahmad Qadian's* life.

* * *

20



AHMAD QADIANI, THE PROMISED MESSIAH AND THE JESUS OF THE LAST ERA

180

The best example on the face of this planet conforming to what we have mentioned above is *Ahmad Qadiani* who had lived his life by being connected to the **JINNS**. According to his life story, which he himself has written, he was born in a town called *Qadian* in India.

* * *

According to him, he had learned that his family was originated from *Samerkand* by means of *Kashf* (unveiling). In terms of his character, he is a sensitive person who has isolated himself from the others in order that he can remain in seclusion.

* * *

From time to time, he would stay alone by himself to perform certain practices to do with getting to know the true meaning of his origin of 'self'.

On one of those particular days, he suddenly hears a secret voice. This is a kind of voice which could only be heard by him. Even if there were other people around him at that moment, nobody else could hear that voice except him.

This secret voice informed him that his father will die on that very day after the call for the evening prayer.

When *Ahmad Qadiani* hears this voice, he becomes extremely frightened and feels very sad.

Amidst this fear and sorrow the voice comes again:

-‘Is *Allah* not sufficient for His servant?’

181

And his father really dies late that afternoon.

Ahmad Qadiani carries on with telling his story as follows:

-‘Afterwards, I’ve heard that voice many more times. It was that voice which has taught me many things! It has introduced me to the world and made me famous! As I was poor and in need, that voice has provided me with plenty of richness so that I could perform good deeds to help those in a charitable way!’

After giving a brief introduction on the personal characteristics of *Ahmad Qadian*, we are now going to mention what he had said on how one of the **JINNS** have managed to establish a connection with him and then directed him towards some wrong beliefs as if they were real.

* * *

Ahmad Qadiani’s thoughts about the voice that he has heard with his ears were in the following manner:

‘I have no doubt that the voices that came to my ears are of a divine nature. Because, if I had been fooled by Satan and as a result the evilness in me became manifested, I would then have noticed that definitely’.

Sometimes I could hear those words from far away and at times those words come out of my own mouth, but I was not the one who said them.

This happened to such an extent that sometimes I could even spoke in different languages that I have no knowledge about.

I do not believe that an ordinary spirit or spirits did possess me by entering inside me.

This is something quite different! However, in what way it is different? I am sensing that it is different anyway and this is enough for me as well as for those who are connected to me!

Now, let us see what *Ahmad Qadiani* who has finally been seduced by the **JINN** and diverted from the truth has done.

Finally he comes out one day and says:

‘LA ILAHA ILLALLAH, MOHAMMADUN RASULULLAH! (There is no god only *Allah*, Mohammad is the messenger of *Allah*) I am the messiah, the son of Mary who fills the heart of Mohammad with his love, the last and greatest of all the prophets.

No any other prophet other than Mohammad will come, but only one individual will have the privilege to attain his honourable rank. That individual is me! Ahmad of Qadian has become a *Nabi* (Messenger) without causing any harm to his master Mohammad whose rank is being the last *nabi* - *Khatam-ul-Nabieen* (Seal of the Prophets) and he has received a sacred duty from his God!

* * *

Mirza Ghulam Ahmad of Qadian who is known by this name died after the First World War and he had manifested lots of signs, which are referred as miracles.

Thousands of people have got connected to him by the dreams that they've seen. Those who have stayed close to him for a period of forty days have received divine indications and cleared themselves from all their denials. He could cure the paralysed patients by a few strokes of the hand and the ill simply by saying a few words. These are some of his so called miracles, which occurred on a regular basis. Moreover, some people who had argued with him had eventually ended up as dead, which made his fame spread around even more.

183

* * *

Mirza Ghulam Ahmad of Qadian had claimed that he was the *Mahdi* (The Guided One) and said that Jesus who is going to come to the world in the last era and the *Mahdi* (The Guided One) were the same person. In the end, he assumed that he was this particular individual. If we consider this event more realistically, it can be seen that he did this in order to spread and expand Islam. There is no wonder that in doing so, he had been successful up to a certain extent. However, when the matter is investigated in detail, it would be seen that the **JINNS** who have initially managed to make a single person dependent on them, use that person again, so that thousands of other individuals would also become dependent on them as well through that person. In order to achieve this task more efficiently, they've used Islam as a tool.

* * *

As *Muhyiddin Ibn 'Arabi* has stated in his book titled '*Futuhut al-Makkiyya*' (Meccan Revelations), the most significant feature that is observed on the people who have been obsessed and dominated by the **JINNS** in this way is that they possess a 'prideful' nature and feel that they are more 'superior'. In reality, this is the work of the **JINNS** who provide these people with such false beliefs.

In general, people with such beliefs consider themselves as the most superior person of their times. Furthermore, if examined more carefully, it can be seen that they even claim to be the most important and high ranked religious person who had come after *Hazrat Mohammad Aleyhesselaam* (May Allah's Peace Be upon Him).

184

According to those who are connected to the Islamic society, '*Mahdi*' is the name given to a religious leader who would be seen in the world one or two hundred years before the actual doomsday, who would possess so many extraordinary powers and hence causing Islam to spread all over the world!

The **JINNS** have inspired lots of individuals whom they've deceived and made dependant on them that they were in fact the awaited '*Mahdi*', which made them believe that they live with this assumption and deceive their surroundings accordingly.

* * *

Because this is an issue that has close relation with our subject, I find it necessary to give some brief information regarding the nature of *Mahdi* and *Mahdism*.

* * *

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN



MAHDI AND MAHDISM

As can be seen from some of the explanations of *Hz. Mohammad*, in order to renew the religion, every century *Allah Taala* sends a person who would be responsible to carry out the duty of expanding the religion of Islam. This is such a belief that is accepted by so many people who take Islam seriously as well as by those who are spiritually guided.

186

* * *

Again, in accordance with the explanations of the *Rasool of Allah*, the duty of this person is **‘to explain the religion of Islam according to the understanding of the present time’** and to show that the religion is not just something that belongs to the people of the ancient days. In this way, he would manage the means to direct them towards the truth.

* * *

The person referred by the name *Mahdi* is the twelfth grandson of *Hz. Mohammad* who had fallen into a well at the age of six and is dead by drowning in it. For that reason, the person who is being awaited has no relation with him whatsoever.

In actual fact, '*Mahdi*' is the nick name given to the person who is being expected.

In some of his explanations, the Holy Prophet recounts that 'A renovator carrying my name will come in time.' Some commentators interpreted this assertion in such a way that the name of the person who would come is either 'Ahmed' or 'Mohammad'. As a matter of fact, *Mirza Ghulam Ahmad of Qadian* thought that he was the '*MAHDI*' himself, because his name was 'Ahmed' and he was seduced by the JINNS.

There is extensive information on this subject in the **hadith** (sayings) book called '**IBN MAJAH**'.

187 *Imam Al-Rabbani Ahmad Farooq Sirhindi* is a very well known character among the possessors of Sufism who has become famous as the renovator of the year 2000 according to the Islamic calendar. In his book named *Maktubat* (Letters), he gives us the following information about the rank of the '*MAHDI*':

"The *Rabb* (Lord) of *MAHDI* whose coming has been informed to us also possess all the qualities connected with the divine knowledge.

Like *Hazrat Ali*, this valuable person too is connected to *Hazrat Isa* (A.S).

It looks almost as if one foot of *Hazrat Isa* (A.S) is on the head of *Hazrat Ali* and the second foot is on the head of *MAHDI*."

* * *

In the Encyclopaedia of Islam, the following information is given as a summary about the person referred as *Mahdi* who is being expected:

“The meaning of *Mahdi* is a person who is being divinely guided by *Allah*. In the past, this word had been used to refer to some individuals and in the future, it is being used for a person who would come before the doomsday.

This word has been used for the first time for the caliph of the state of *Amawis*, *H.z.Omar* the second who was being referred as a *‘Mujaddid’* (Renovator). Omar, the second was accepted as an honourable figure to have the privilege of being guided by *Allah*.

* * *

However, in later years it has been acknowledged that the first *Mujaddid* (Renovator) was Omar the second and the last would either be *‘Mahdi’* or *‘Jesus’*. As can be seen, there are two different views on this subject.”

188

In his book called *‘Muqaddima’* (Introduction), *Ibn Khaldun* states the following about the person referred as the *‘Mahdi’* in the section titled ‘The ancestors of Fatima and the position people take concerning her, removing the veil from all of that’:-

“Know that it has been commonly accepted among the masses of the people of Islam throughout the ages that there must be at the end of time the appearance of a man from the House of the Prophet who will help the religion and make justice triumphant and whom the Muslims will follow and who will gain control over the Islamic lands, and who will be called the *Mahdi*.

His rule over the world would take place with the DESCENSION of Jesus.

The appearance of the *Dajjal* (Antichrist) and what comes after him of the preconditions of the Hour (Day of Judgement) which are firmly established in the *sahih* (sound) literature will be right after him.

Isa (Jesus) will descend after the appearance of the *Dajjal* (Antichrist) and will kill the *Dajjal* (Antichrist) who will emerge soon after the appearance of *Mahdi*."

In his book titled '*Muqaddima*' (Introduction), *Ibn Khaldun* recounts formally twenty-four traditions bearing upon the belief in *Mahdi* and questions the authenticity of them all. In 14 of these traditions of the Holy Prophet Mohammad, the Renewer (*Mujaddid*) is defined by the name '*Mahdi*'.

189

So, the discussions that are being held and debated over the issue of '*Mahdi*' within the Islamic community in our present world continue in this manner.

* * *

Similarly, it is a common belief in the Islamic world that the Doomsday is going to take place before the year 1600 according to Islamic calendar. This is being derived from the answer given to the following question that is asked to Hz. Mohammad:-

'O! The *Rasool* (Messenger) of *Allah*, when would the Doomsday take place?

He answers:

-If my community goes on the right path, it will be after the year 1000!

* * *

Likewise, the expression that is commonly used among the public referring to the day of resurrection is purely based on this **hadith** (saying) which states that **'It will not take place until the year 1500 is reached, however it will come about before the year 1600'**.

As the figure 2000 is not mentioned here, the commentators have figured out that the doomsday will take place between the years 1000 and 2000, which by an approximate calculation coincides somewhere between the years 1400 and 1600 according to the Islamic calendar.

Taking into account the fact that in every 200 years a new *Mujaddid* (Renovator) comes, a number of Muslim people who got stuck on this calculation assume that the final and the 7th *Mujaddid* (Renovator) will come around the beginning of the 1400. As he is going to be the final *Mujaddid* (Renovator), he will be called as the '*Mahdi*'.

190

* * *

Again, it is widely accepted in the same circles that the person who will be called as the '*Mahdi*' will be a saint of the highest rank. He will be able to observe any point in the world at any moment he wishes, he will be so powerful that he would exercise his power to rule whenever and wherever he wants. He will also abolish the *Kufr* (blasphemy) from the face of the Islamic world and together with Prophet Jesus who would descend afterwards; he will explain Islam all over the world as the only religion and then abolish all the sects as well as the different orders. He will also enliven the system of belief that was prevalent during the time of the Hz. *Rasool* (Messenger) of *Allah*.

People who had lived in various times and places imposed idea to the individuals around them either explicitly or secretly that they were indeed the *Mahdi* themselves and such people still live in this present day. They simply took advantage of these people around them who had very little knowledge on these subjects, so that they could deceive them very easily.

191

On the other hand, most of these people are the ones who are being RULED BY THE **JINNS**, but they are simply not aware of this fact. So, they are being guided by the tricks of the **JINNS** without knowing anything at all and therefore they think they are the *Mahdi*. Because the dreams they see are based on evil sources connected to the **JINNS** as well as those hallucinations that they get from outside world, which simply makes them believe that they perceive themselves as the *Mahdi*.

These people can influence the others around themselves by the assistance of the **JINNS**. As far as we know the only way to get protected from their field of influence is to have the knowledge of what they really are and recite the '**PRAYER of JINN**'.

There is no definite evidence for the exact coming date of the *Mahdi* who is expected in any moment by the Muslims. Even the saints, with the exception of those in the '**SUPREME COUNCIL OF SAINTS**' do not know anything about this matter.

Now, according to the Islamic calendar, as the time comes closer towards fifteen years past 1400, the subject is being discussed more in detail in many places around the world and

as a result, there has been a significant increase in the number of people who think that they are the *Mahdi*.

* * *

It's such a pity that in this day and age, there are so many people who think that they are the *Mahdi* due to their insufficient knowledge and they are simply being carried away by these false dreams because of the deceiving inspirations passed onto them by the JINNS. These people who have been fooled by the JINNS also influence other people simply by dragging them to these wrong paths and as a result, they all become a source of amusement for the JINNS.

192

However, the real '*Mahdi*' will first emerge in *Meccah* and then flee to *Medina*. Following this, an army will be sent against him and this army will be swallowed up in the desert completely. These events will be the evidence showing that he is the *Mahdi*.

A person with a sound judgement living either in Istanbul or in Ankara or in Izmir or in Denizli or in any other city will not claim that he is the *Mahdi* himself. If he does so, then this indicates that he is subject to a psychiatric evaluation by experts or he must be helped by exorcists who will expel the **JINN**.

* * *

Our opinion on this subject is that we need the time in order to evaluate this matter in its true sense and therefore we are in favour of the principle '**let's wait and see what happens**'. It comes as no surprise to us that for about twenty years, we have witnessed that during every Hajj period, anyone who anticipated that the *Mahdi* will come out in that particular

year has made all their future plans in view of that but unfortunately they got disappointed in the end.

In spite of all these factors, we neither choose denial due to our limited comprehension nor agree that this matter isn't associated with the pillars of faith, because there is no concrete evidence regarding its accuracy. If a person with this sort of attitude comes near to us and we notice him, then we make our final decision based on the facts that we have in our hand at that particular time and behave accordingly.

There is no doubt that the time explains everything in the best possible manner!



WHY HAVE THE NUMBER OF THE MAHDIS INCREASED

194

Today, there has been a considerable increase observed in the number of people who claim that they are *Mahdis*. Almost in every city, there are a few individuals who are deceiving not only themselves but those around themselves too simply by dreaming that they are the *Mahdi*. Indeed, it is such a pity that those people who are naive and ignorant are ridiculed by their **JINNS**! For this reason, it is very difficult for them to be saved from those influences!

Some of these people are exaggerated by the media in a great deal while others remain silent behind the scenes, holding their swords in their hands as they dream that a day will eventually come when they will rise to the glory.

These super *Mahdis* who accept themselves as the '*Sheikh*' of tens of thousands of people consider every person greeting them as one of their dervishes. The increase in the number of *Mahdis* is due to the fact that all of these people have been obsessed by the **JINNS** without knowing and as a result, the **JINNS** begun to dominate them. We had already explained this subject in the previous pages.

Now, let us talk about this particular event from another aspect.

If you search for a special channel in the TV, you will then come across the following situation.

At first, your screen is covered by the unknown distorted images, which are not clear at all, comprising of disturbed waves that belong to the particular broadcast you have been searching for! Next, the waves which cannot be easily seen will take the scene! After that, if you get a little closer to the broadcast, then the disturbances disappear and the snowy, shady images take their places on the screen. In the end, all you will see is the original broadcast!

195

As we have explained before, every single event that occurs in the world around us takes place by the aid of the cosmic influences coming from the stars and all these take place step by step in various stages. Everything starts from zero, goes up to the highest point, reaches the peak level and then starts to go down to become zero again! This is the order of the entire cosmos, which is an arrangement that is absolute and free from any uncertainty!

In this world, all the events are formed in certain cycles and in the light of today's terminology, at certain periods, certain movements become **FASHIONABLE**.

For the past twenty years, we have been told by many people from different backgrounds that the *Mahdi* would come out that year. However, our answer to that was always '**No!**' It is a divine grace that we were not wrong in our thinking and therefore we were not embarrassed at all. As a matter of fact, our researches on this subject had indicated that the

appearance of the person known as *Mahdi* was still quite a long time away.

If this was the scenario, then why on earth the people of our day (those who could not realise what the tenets expressed in **Amantu** (I believe) has brought and produced for them together with those who had believed an imaginary god and religion) considered themselves as the *Mahdi*?

There were two main reasons for this.

First of all, because they were unaware of anything, they have been dominated by the **JINNS** and as a result, they were dragged into a situation whereby they could take no precautions at all. By doing so, they carried other people as well who had no knowledge on this subject along with themselves.

196

Secondly, they were under the influence of the disturbed energy waves rather than the original waves.

These energy waves are referred to as the side waves which carries the meaning as well as the wisdom of the *Mahdi* and these has already begun to become widespread around the face of the earth.

These waves portray the same characteristics in the case of the *Messiah* as well!

For this reason, in the years to come, many individuals will appear in various forms who will accept themselves under the disguise of '*Mahdi*' or '*JESUS*' and they will attempt to guide the people around them.

Under these circumstances it will be necessary for the humans to have some knowledge on certain facts regarding

the true nature of these matters in order that they are not deceived and they will have a more realistic opinion.

Starting with **hadiths** (sayings) books such as '*Qutub-u Sittu*' (Six Hadith Collection Books), many other books also agree fully that the Jesus would come to the planet earth. According to this explanation given by Jesus himself at that time, this appearance would take place after 2000 years.

Before the emergence of Jesus on earth, a being pointed out by the name *Dajjal* (Antichrist) who shall manifest extraordinary powers and will be a great tribulation for the humankind. He will claim that he himself is '*Allah*' who has come from the heavens and that he is the long awaited *Rabb* (Lord) of the humankind. This being will remain on earth for a period of forty days and at the end of this period, he will be killed by Jesus who will descend onto the earth!

197

Jesus will live on earth for 40 years. Out of these 40 years, he will spend a period of 9-11 years together with the *Mahdi*.

In other words, the *Mahdi* will spend the last 9-11 years of his life with the Jesus Aleyhesselaam (Peace and blessings be upon Jesus) after which his soul shall be departed for the life beyond death.

Furthermore, the *Dajjal* (Antichrist) will appear during the last 9 or 11 years of the life time of the person named as *Mahdi*.

My late master *Hadji Osman Efendi* of Medina (was also known as the master of *Beykoz*) had told me the following in the year 1963:

"As stated by the Egyptian astrologers, approximately some years ago, the newspapers of Cairo had written that the star of the *Mahdi* was born. Now, he is growing up among us".

With respect to all these information and the things that I cannot write, my opinion is that:-

‘Before the advent of *Mahdi*, the third world war will take place and not even a single stone will manage to endure the effects of this war in Europe. Following these events, a person called as the ‘*Mahdi*’ will present himself during a *Hajj* (Pilgrimage) period in Mecca due to the persistent wishes of the *Rejal ul Ghaib* (Hidden Spiritual Men). Following this, he will go to Medina and there, an army would be sent onto him from the direction of Damascus and this army will be swallowed by the earth and sink into the ground completely somewhere around near Medina. It is also mentioned in various valuable sources that while the *Mahdi* is in Istanbul, the *Dajjal* (Antichrist) will emerge’.

198

Therefore, it is pointed out that before the advent of *Mahdi*, it is expected that there would be lots of political changes and wars in Europe, United States, Russia and the Middle East.

In summary, whatever the case may be, the start of these events would be around the beginning of the 2000’s.

As a matter of fact, the astrological transits clearly indicate that important events are going to take place soon after the planet Uranus enters the sign Aquarius in 1996. What’s more is that if we take into consideration the fact that Pluto will enter Sagittarius in approximately the same period, it will then become an obvious fact that those who are dealing with this subject could see what kind of important events will take place.

So, as this period comes closer, the number of false individuals who think that they are the *Mahdi* or *Jesus Aleyhesselaam* (Peace and blessings be upon Jesus) increases

and this will cause the emergence of some false *Dajjals* (Antichrists) as well.

According to an explanation given by Hz.Mohammad (Peace be upon him), before the advent of the actual *Dajjal* (Antichrist), nearly 30 more false *Dajjals* (Antichrists) would come out and they will all claim themselves to be a 'PROPHET'.

This simply indicates that before and after the occurrence of every single wave originating from the main source, false side waves would also appear.

199 The humans will be making a big mistake by accepting the *Dajjal* (Antichrist) as the GOD that they have been waiting for. This is because they fall into an erroneous judgement when they assume that '*Allah*' is a God up above the sky, like a God of the HEAVENS!

The only way that people can save themselves against *Dajjal* (Antichrist) is that they should realise and perceive really well what ***Allah*** as explained by Hz.Mohammad really is all about.

It is our opinion that those people who have not realised what *Allah* is according to the definition given in the *Koran-al Karim* are suitable to be the victims of a false God!

* * *



WHY SOME OF THE SAINTS ARE THOUGHT TO BE THE ‘MAHDI’?

200

I would now like to lay emphasis on another point as this is the right time to do so.

Indeed, it is quite common that those people who have been trained on the path of some great saints while being under their protection still can't help to assume that they are the *Mahdi* even though they have no relation with the **JINNS** whatsoever.

So, even though they are not under the influence of the **JINNS** and under protection, how do they think of themselves as the '*Mahdi*' and give this impression to their surroundings?

* * *

In Sufism, as the individual proceeds on the path he sets out for himself, he would come across some stages as he goes along. For example, attaining the '**Rank of Ghaus**' or the '**Rank of Enoch**' or the '**Rank of Mahdi**' and so on.

* * *

It is also pointed out by the people of wisdom that as the person advances through this spiritual station, the qualities of that particular rank is reflected onto him and like a mirror reflecting around the rays of the sun falling onto it, the individual thinks of himself as the source of that light.

However, the people who belong to this category can never take refrain themselves from this pleasure for a considerable length of time and as a result, they think of themselves as such individuals who actually possess these qualities. On the other hand, those around him who cannot fully realize the truth assume that he is the actual person possessing all these qualities as a consequence of the position he is currently experiencing.

201

An individual with such a condition can be saved from this easily if the person who makes him walk on this path is strong enough, which will then make that person understand the truth. However, if the person who helps him to proceed along this path is weak and has not yet reached perfection, then he will stay at that stage for a long time; sometimes 5-10 years and sometimes all his life and as a result, he will identify himself as someone who belongs to that level of consciousness. So, without realizing anything, he would be deceiving all those people around him.

Now, let us go back to our main subject once again.

* * *



THE JINNS CHANNELLING HUMANS BY USING VARIOUS TITLES (THROUGH ISLAMIC WAY)

202

Such deceptions generally take place whenever an individual is sent to sleep (taken into a state of trance) and then the **JINN** starts to introduce itself as:

-I'm the spirit of Mawlana!

-I'm the so and so father!

Following this introduction, the **JINN** forms a connection with the people present there. As the clairvoyant medium writes, the pencil starts to write down by itself and in this manner the **JINN** introduces himself as "I'm the so and so person".

Or else, the **JINN** involved become visible to the eye of the individual under the disguise of a certain saint.

* * *

Apart from these, it is possible that there maybe other methods, which we have not yet come across.

In the light of all the research we have carried out up until today, we have found out that these three methods are the most common ones in all situations.

For example, the person who comes along says the following:

-I'm Mawlana!

He then greets everybody who is present there with quite a big salutation and starts to speak in a kind of language that is very complex to understand.

If examined carefully, it will be seen that there seems to be a dialogue and an information exchange between both sides, which is far beyond the capacity of that individual who is sleeping in a trance state.

203

In such situations, the people who once never thought about the existence of the **JINNS** automatically start to believe that the one who is actually addressing to them is in fact the *Mawlana* or the so and so Father.

In particular, the people of our time are remote from religious subjects and they do not have sufficient knowledge with regards to the beings named as the spirit, the **JINN** and the like. What's more is that, it is in the nature of the human beings that they have an innate interest towards the secret and a fascination on mysterious things. So, by taking these factors into consideration, it becomes much clear how easy it is to believe in that being who is doing the talking.

Just imagine that someone in front of you has been put to sleep who will then start to talk in a manner, which does not have any connection with that person you already know. Moreover, he tells you about the things that you've done in the past, the things that only you can have the knowledge of

and about the things that you have made on that very day before you actually went to that place!

As a result, lots of people start to gather around the **JINN** gradually and he tells all those present there that he is the spirit of some saint talking from the mouth of the individual who has been put to sleep.

* * *

Eventually, whenever the people who have been gathered around that person are examined thoroughly, it can be seen that almost all of them have a common feature.

Majority of these people are good willed, they are sincere and they have a lot of respect for the religion. They feel sorry for not being able to fulfil the requirements of the religion appropriately and they always look for ways to save themselves from all this, because their knowledge about the religion is extremely limited.

204

So, in this manner, the **JINN** who introduced himself to them as “I’m the so and so father” or “I’m the spirit of *Mawlana*” manages to exploit their common interests and as a result gathers a large crowd around himself.

* * *

Meanwhile, the **JINN** enter the dreams of those people in the group who are gathered around him gradually, telling them all about their secrets without offending them. Thus, the **JINN** could establish very firm relations with them simply by exploiting their common interests.

* * *

Afterwards, he tells them that due to conditions existing at that particular time, no *Mujaddid* (Renovator) is ever going to come and for this reason, the human beings would be warned only through these channels. In this way, those people around him are urged to do certain things.

He tells them to perform the daily prayers, give alms to the needy, fast during the month of Ramadan, make good deeds for the sake of others and avoid the bad things, think about the others more than themselves. In this way he triggers their humanistic feelings and connects them to himself. This is the first stage!

* * *

205

In the second stage however, he puts forward his devilish act. At this stage, he starts to impose onto them with some distorted beliefs, which can only be understood by those people who know the religion extremely well. And this is where the real game starts.

He makes some people to believe in the concept of **Wahdat-al-Wujud** (Unity of Existence)! However, what really is meant under this label is not the true understanding of the oneness of the existence, but it is rather the 'PANTHEIST' point of view. It has nothing to do with the Oneness of the existence! By doing so, he makes them believe that they themselves are 'Allah'.

Furthermore, he argues that there would be a phenomenon called reincarnation; that is coming back to the world after death in another body and gives further examples of statements from *Mawlana* that is connected with Sufism in order to support his claim.

In this way, he starts to divert the individuals to wrong beliefs.

As a matter of fact, anybody with a religious knowledge observing them closely can easily determine every single detail that they have such characteristics, which are unsuitable for Islam.

* * *

On the other hand, deceiving by using the pencil is a much more simple method than what we have already described above.

In this method, the individual never sees any being that is in touch with him.

206

While holding the pencil on the paper as if he would write something, the pencil starts to write by itself.

* * *

At first, the being uses a nickname, for example he makes the pencil write:

'I am *Mawlana Jalaluddin Rumi!* You, the blessed person, the traveller embarking on the sacred road to *Allah*, I salute you!'

This astonishes the individual who is doing the act of writing, the being then continues.

From that point onwards, the pencil gets used to writing all by itself!

The pencil writes down that whoever is holding it is a very high person, one of the leading saints of that time, it simply tries to provide that individual lots of convincing evidence that he is actually a saint.

The being carries on the act of writing, which gives the answers to the questions that are passing from the individual's mind.

In the beginning, such a person does not know what the pencil is going to write. However, as soon as he starts to pay more attention, he finds out that before the pencil writes down anything, first the same letter or the word then the short sentences that have a few words comes to his mind.

* * *

207

Following this, the **JINN** nicknamed as so and so makes him write poems, books and starts telling him about the activities carried out by various people in the past. Meanwhile, in order to gain the confidence of the individual, the **JINN** make some predictions for the future.

Let us give an example to illustrate this point:

Couple of years ago in Ankara, a **JINNI** came to a meeting where a group of people was present and he introduced himself as:

'The angel named Basheer-al Kiraam!'

He then made some future predictions, which are summarised as follows:

The starting date of the third world war will be around the years 1974-75 at which time Israel will defeat the Arabs and expand its lands reaching the Turkish borders. Turkey will manage to survive the third world war with very few losses and around the year 1980, a person named as *Mahdi* will appear in Turkey. According to this claim, the person expected as *Mahdi* will be someone who has reached the age

of 50 with no special qualities and that he will be speaking through the mouth of angel.

We have already mentioned that by appearing in the image of the saints and then becoming visible to the individual in that form, the **JINNS** can deceive that individual and tie him to themselves.

Generally speaking, it can be said that the individuals whom they have deceived in this way are completely far away from the awareness of having religious knowledge.

The person who is confronted with such a scene gets shocked at first. He has no any other choice but to believe in the person in front of him who is dressed up in clothes as in the olden days, wearing a gown and a turban. And eventually he believes!

208

* * *

From then on, he starts doing whatever that being tells him to do. With all those things he has heard from that being, he manages to gather lots of people around him. However, those people around him cannot actually see what he can see. For this reason, whatever he tells them they have to believe in him. Eventually, some of those who are gathered around him start seeing that being that is also seen by him in their dreams.

Besides, from time to time the individual who is under deception could show that certain being as an example to those who have strongly attached to him! In this way, it is possible to form a loyal group whose members are strongly attached to him.

* * *

Meanwhile, that person sees the same **JINN** in various types of clothing and assumes that his level of awareness has reached such a high level that he is also able to meet with other saints. From time to time, that **JINNI** takes his friends along and makes them look as they are some of those great men of religion. In this manner, those poor people are deceived and attached to him completely.

* * *

209

As a matter of fact, some individuals who have been obsessed by a very strong **JINNI** can show other **JINNS** wearing dresses similar to those of the old saints as an example to those around them. In this way, he causes the people around him to believe that he is a very important person indeed and all those saints who have lived in the past have come here to visit him.

Moreover, this situation goes to such an extent that in some cases, the person is not fully aware that he is being fooled by the **JINNS** and because he thinks of himself as a very important, great person due to the ideas imposed upon him by the **JINNS**, he permits some saints to enter his presence. In this way he can prove to all the others how great saint he really is. At this point, a door at his location is opened and two or three or even four **JINNS** wearing old clothes enter the room under the guise of very well known saints.

The people who are present there are already excited very much by what has happened, therefore they can never realise whether these newcomers are **JINNS** or they are real saints who have lived long time ago! This event simply has shocked them!

* * *

From that moment onwards, they are powerfully attached to that person who has revealed them this incident almost as if he is a God.

* * *

However, as we already pointed out before, whoever you meet among them, their common characteristic would always be to deny the existence of **JINNS**.

Now, let us talk about the way in which the **JINNS** dominate the humans by leading them to humanistic goals and fooling them through the spiritualism phenomenon.

* * *

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN

25



HOW DO THE JINNS RULE THE PEOPLE BY THE STORY OF SPIRITUALISM

212

It is the desire of the **JINNS** to dominate those people who are away from practicing the Islamic objectives as they have no connection with this religion at all. They also want to influence those people whose sole interest for Islam does not go anywhere beyond what is written in their identity cards. This is the main reason why they employ the humanistic ideas on humans as a way of temptation.

They set down various rules in order to be a mature, perfect human being and invite all the humans to become such a perfect being.

Gathering human beings around themselves in this manner, the **JINNS** manage to spread out so many humanistic ideas.

* * *

In such meetings, a person is usually hypnotized and put to sleep, in other words he is being put into a state of trance in order to make a connection with a spirit.

Three-four or five-six-seven people all come together in one room, the lights are dimmed and a blue or red light with a low voltage is used.

Then, by the suggestion of the persons around, an attempt is made to put a person who has mediumistic qualities into sleeping state.

In reality, this activity is carried out solely for the purpose of making the subject individual sleep totally so that the effect of the 'human' conscious over the body will be completely lifted and disappear.

213 The individual who has been put to sleep then starts telling the following:

-I'm getting higher gradually. I am passing through the clouds. I've now started to see so and so things in front of me.

Then, he starts to talk with those entities that he has seen.

Following this, those that he has seen ask for permission to talk.

In this manner, the conversation with the spirit of so and so called person gets a start.

However, all these are nothing more than just a game put on stage by the **JINN** who is already in direct contact with people present there in order to make them sleep and fool them. In reality, the person who has been put into the state of trance and as a result is sleeping by now has not even moved any further than a millimetre from where he is since he went to sleep.

So, this is what really happens when the game is played:

Soon after that person has gone to sleep, in other words as the human conscious dominating the 'brain' and the 'physical body' becomes no longer active, the **JINN** whose frequency is very close to the frequency of the person sleeping would then take over the scene and contact the individual.

At the beginning, this **JINNI** has started to send signals to the brain of the person that acted as an adaptor, just like in the case of a radio. After that, the **JINNI** has begun to influence the section in the brain of that person that is connected with speech and as a result, the **JINNI** started to address to all those who are present there from within the mouth of that person in quite a typical way.

214

However, as the people who were present there could not see anything, they thought that the words that came out from the mouth of the sleeping person making such statements as "I'm going to that place, I'm talking to that person" were in fact all true.

* * *

In reality, neither anybody comes along nor does anybody go!

On one side, there is a human being who has been put to deep sleep and as a result could not control his conscious mind with the help of his own free will and on the other side, there is a **JINNI** who has dominated the brain of the sleeping individual and talking to the other people present there in order to deceive them.

Finally, with this event, it becomes more obvious that the strength of the game as well as its influence depends very much on the capacity of the **JINN**.

If however, this **JINNI** happens to be one of those leading clever ones, he can then influence the people who are present there very easily. In addition to that, he can also make them do whatever he desires.

* * *

Therefore, people who are present there do whatever the **JINN** tells them, because there is a being out there who communicates by addressing to each one them about some of their inner secrets, however this being cannot be seen! Now, according to those people who have witnessed this event, rejecting this reality would be a complete foolishness since they are not fully aware of the truth of the matter themselves.

* * *



ABOUT THE ANTICHRIST AND THE ANTICHRISTHOOD

216

Here, whether we want it or not, we are simply concerned with a being that comes to our minds named as *Dajjal* (Antichrist), which is often mentioned in Islam as well as in other past religions.

According to the information that has been conveyed to us, this being named as *Dajjal* (Antichrist) will show people some extraordinary powers and he would eventually want them to believe in him.

* * *

However, according to the Islamic religious sources, before the advent of real *Dajjal* (Antichrist), approximately thirty other false *Dajjals* (Antichrists) will appear each presuming that they are a PROPHET who will inform others around them fraudulently. They will simply want the people to believe in them and order them to do certain things or vice versa.

* * *

However, the real *Dajjal* (Antichrist) who will come finally will not only claim that he is '**ALLAH**' himself, but he will also want the humans to worship him as he would show them some extraordinary events!

For this reason, our mind gets occupied with the thought of these thirty false *Dajjals* (Antichrists) who will appear before the real *Dajjal* (Antichrist) claiming that each one of them is a prophet.

It is obvious that both in Turkey and in many other parts of the world, the **JINNS** gather people around themselves solely for the purpose of fooling them under the appearance of humanistic objectives. They present themselves or any other leading character from those groups as a 'modern PROPHET' and by doing so they want from everybody to fulfil whatever that person desires. Furthermore, they claim that this particular group will be the leader or the leaders of Turkey. In fact, this is another type of manifestation of the *Mahdi* doctrine, which we have mentioned above.

Moreover, our research reveals that in today's world there are such people attached to these groups who possess such a state of mind that upon receiving orders, killing a human being for them without any hesitation is simply out of question. They resemble the dervishes of *Hasan Sabah* who are addicted to drugs!

In fact, anyone who investigates the essence of these groups with a careful logical reasoning by means of studying the talks and the information given would be able to discover many misleading statements, which appear to contradict each other.

In general, the questions directed to them concerning scientific questions as well as the unknown matters are always answered in a false manner and therefore these statements are far from being taken into account.

What's more is that, these invisible beings always give unreliable and ambiguous answers whenever they are asked questions concerning the future, which could be interpreted in almost any direction.

* * *

One of the greatest methods of deception they implement is to reveal all those secret things that the newcomers in the group have done during those days and disclose these to the others in the group in an explicit manner.

218

Whenever the state of mind and the level of knowledge of these people who are connected with these groups is examined closely, it would be seen that each of them are far from possessing the true knowledge about the religion, especially those issues concerning the subject of the SPIRIT and the **JINN**. They simply deny these concepts because of their nature. For this reason, they have become like slaves or the victims of those beings that they could not see.

Here, we should not forget the fact and say that the **JINNS** with whom these groups are in touch with **HAVE MADE AN IMMEDIATE ANNOUCEMENT AFTER THIS BOOK HAS BEEN PUBLISHED AND DECLARED THAT READING THIS BOOK IS FORBIDDEN BY THOSE WHO BELIEVE IN THEM!**

Of course, there is no doubt that those who read this book will surely discover the real truth behind the **JINNS** and they would understand all about their hidden qualities in a much better way.

* * *

In fact, if we examine the prayers performed by some of people in these groups who claim that they believe in *Allah*, we can notice what their conditions are like straight away.

For example, some of them belonging to this category perform the daily prayers only three times a day or only once! Moreover, they perform these daily prayers only while they are **STANDING** which means that they do it without the act of bowing and prostrating! While some others do it only by prostrating!

219

They also give to charity! They assume that in return of these alms that they've given, all their sins would be forgiven. Of course, this is done by the great SPIRIT that is ruling them! While they perform lots of sinful acts and crimes, they also give lots of charity away and by doing so they think they have become innocent feeling that they are being released from these crimes and sins!

* * *

In brief, whichever religion the **JINN** dominating that particular group feels close to and whichever religion the majority of people who come to join to that group feel themselves connected or inclined to, the rules of that religion is valid there. Therefore, that place is governed by the set of laws that are connected with that religion.

Among these groups, there are several ones who charge money to some people in public for the purpose of curing them and this could amount to hundreds of millions. Even though there are only a few patients who recover among them, this ratio does not exceed 2-3%.

So, in this way, thousands of good willed, clean, pure and innocent people looking for the truth are being fooled and as a result they are diverged from the right path.

* * *

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN



DEALING WITH THE JINNS AND WITCHCRAFT

222

At the root of all these spirit calling tricks, there lies the issue of '**Science of Huddam**', which is a technique that teaches how to use the **JINNS** as servants and this was a method adapted by the people of old times. This is usually referred by the public as the 'work of dealing with the **JINNS**'.

This is a subject, which is very well known especially by people who lived in the old days and by the people of Anatolia. It is as follows:

For each particular prayer or *tasbih* (glorification), there is a being who is in charge known as the '**Hadim**', the helper or the servant of that prayer.

If someone sits down and repeats that certain prayer or the word by the given number of times and then asks from the **JINN** who appear in front of him without getting frightened for anything he wants, then that wish is granted immediately!

Or else, if he wants to rule that **JINN**, then that **JINN** becomes a servant for him! In order to achieve this, there are a lot of formulas available!

In the old days, many books had been written which explained these formulas. The most famous among these books is the one known as the '*KENZ-UL HAVAS* (The Book of Hidden Sciences)'. In this book, there are plenty formulas.

However, here we should remind everyone that there is a very big difference between dealing with the science of '**HUDDAM**' and '**CALLING SPIRITS/ SPIRITUALISM**'.

The difference is as follows:

Calling a spirit or spiritualism is a game whereby the individuals getting in touch with the **JINNS** always become like a toy in their hands.

223

Just like a rabbit that has fallen into the hands of a lion; the **JINN** plays with them as he pleases and they can never become aware of this situation.

Whereas, in the science of '**Huddam**', being able to apply every aspect of the formula in full would mean that the human being will take the **JINN** completely into his hands and make that being to do whatever he wants. Moreover, by using the **JINN** in this way, he can make another person get killed. Of course, if the order is not obeyed, the **JINN** will suffer from this terribly.

Therefore, using this science offers an absolute advantage for the human being when compared with other systems.

* * *

The '**Science of Huddam**' was something which was known by the people of old days and today only a few people know its existence. Because of the difference mentioned above, it is in a very superior position with respect to the spiritualism. Because, as we have already explained; in this science, the

human being can take the **JINN** under his control. However, in the case of contacting with the **JINNS** by means of using the methods such as '**Spiritualism**' or '**Calling the spirits**', forcing the **JINN** into giving certain information or having them to do something is never possible in any way whatsoever.

* * *

However, here, it will be necessary to explain the following point very clearly. If an individual makes a start to apply a certain formula that will be necessary to perform the '**Science of Huddam**' and then he suddenly stops this activity for some reason, this is the moment when the disaster begins for him. For example, while in the process of applying the formula halfway through, he suddenly hears some voices or sees some strange shaped objects at that very instant and as a result becomes frightened and stops the application.

224

At that point, the **JINN** whom he was trying to take under his control deceive him so easily and while the individual was trying to dominate the **JINN**, he is defeated by the **JINN** and starts to control him. From then on, that individual is ruled under the orders given by the **JINN**. In this manner, while in the effort of getting something better, one loses the things that he already has.

For this reason, a person who is involved with practicing a formula based on the '**Science of Huddam**' should never do such a thing in the first place anyway. However, if he does it, no matter what happens he should complete the process till the very end.

* * *

As a matter of fact, in order that the formula cannot be fully put into practice, the **JINN** concerned here creates some noises or produces some voices. This can produce such an effect that the house or flat concerned shakes almost as if it is being knocked down. The **JINN** can also become visible in scary forms that are beyond one's imagination! In spite of all these things that are taking place, the individual needs to keep calm as much as possible and finish the process of applying the formula.

In fact, the saying that is commonly used in public 'He has become crazy because he repeated too many prayers using the rosary beads' points to this reality.

225

Anyone who starts to repeat these prayers randomly by himself without the knowledge of that formula or the help of someone to guide him, he will eventually create a cipher around himself whether he realises it or not. At this instant, the **JINN** connected with that cipher automatically becomes active and possesses that person. Obviously, the person involved is not aware of this situation! Furthermore, he does not have the power to take that **JINN** under his control. Eventually, his communication with the **JINN** would begin, whether he wants to or not.

This is a kind of relation that starts by hearing voices, sometimes by the ear and sometimes by the inner voices coming from deep down in our body. Before this happens, it is also possible that he can discover some smells through his nose. If he continues to pray in this manner, he may soon find himself seeing the **JINNS** in various shapes and dresses.

* * *

If people in this category inform the others about the things they see, hear and smell and then share these ideas with them who are not aware of this subject at all, they are immediately labelled as 'having gone out of their minds' and are taken to the hospital without delay. However, the medical science is helpless to find a cure for this condition.

Using the electro-shock to cure it would not be successful either!

In general, the people who fall into this category are such people who continue to live their lives among the rest of the public as 'mad' or under such labels as 'harmless crazy persons'.

226

In spite of their conditionings, if these people meet an authorized individual who specialize in this field, it is possible for them to get out of this state simply because the paths that they follow could be corrected in order that they can continue on the right path.

Otherwise, they will never be saved from this state throughout their lives. They have eventually become 'crazy'.

* * *

Since the earliest centuries, before the time of the primitive tribes, there was a profession which was often practiced in the world.

This profession is named as '**WITCHCRAFT**' and performing it is called the '**Black magic**'.

* * *

The main objective of this line of work is to possess and put the person involved under someone else's influence simply

by means of using force to make him do such things that he does not want to do. However, this work is also exercised for the benefit of healing the patients.

The prophets have all declared that dealing with magic is forbidden in all religions whose essence is directly connected to Allah.

All religions have stated that ‘performing magic’ is not permissible and therefore it is prohibited for the humans.

The religion of Islam has also prohibited the magic and further stated that not only those who deal with it will go out of Islam, but those who have a desire for it to be performed will also be in the same category.

227

The reason why the act of witchcraft is prohibited is because in this way the person’s will power is taken under control by the others in a forceful manner and therefore the situations needs to be prevented completely, which would eventually give them the freedom of choice that they need, so that the human beings can be held fully responsible for the actions they have taken.

The witchcraft and magic was widespread in the world mostly during the period of the Prophet Moses. Because the witchcraft and magic were widely accepted among the people in those days, the Prophet Moses has carried out this task extensively in this world and shown miracles in this field.

* * *

The essence and the origin of the witchcraft go back to the JINNS.

For each word that appear in every single verse written down in all the sacred books namely the Torah, the Psalms of David, the Bible and the Koran including the previous 'pages' revealed, there are 8 beings assigned for that word, each acting as servant.

In other words, for each sacred book that has come down in different periods, for every single word that gives the meaning and the true origin of these sacred book, eight servants are assigned for the purpose of serving this reality. Four of these are superior ones and they are from the category of '**angel**' and four of them are inferior ones and they are from the category of the '**JINN**'.

Repeating these words by a certain number of times according to the calculations based on the '**Science of Abjad**' or reading any of these verses from backwards would most certainly activate the **JINNI** who is in charge of the affairs associated with these 8 words and as a result, they start to put their effect onto the people to whom they have been sent.

As a matter of fact, '**witchcraft**' consists of all the effects that are produced by repeating a word or a sentence a certain number of times and to support this activity with some further practices of reading.

The most powerful counter effect we will advise here will be the prayer that we have already mentioned in the previous pages, which would break the spell of **witchcraft** and provide protection from the **JINNS**.

This prayer can be recited by three or more people who may come together in the house of a person influenced by black magic and can be repeated 300 or 500 times.

If they can do it for three consecutive days, then it would be even more effective. During the time this prayer is being recited, the person who has been influenced by the black magic should also repeat this particular prayer.

In addition to that, if someone puts his right hand on the head of that influenced person and repeat the prayer, it would be very useful indeed.

Meanwhile, if a cup of water is put in the middle and the prayers that have been recited are blown into this water and then it is given to the person concerned for drinking, then this would be even more effective.

229 Should an evil talisman is found either on the premises or on the person who had been subject to black magic, then the most effective way to break this evil force is to melt it by putting it into acid, lemon juice or vinegar.

In order for the black magic to be more effective, the magicians check the daily hours. For instance, is it the **'hour of Venus'** or is it the **'hour of Mars'** etc. Detailed information concerning what these hours are can be found in our book called the **'MYSTERIES OF MAN'**.

* * *

Because, it is a subject which does not have much importance for us when compared with our main subject, we shall not bother to spend too much time here on witchcraft, but instead, we shall try to explain how it can be achieved.

* * *

Today, as it has been revealed by the objective science, the human brain is a structure that radiates some rays at every single instant.

* * *

In order to explain our argument better, we are reporting you with a news bulletin, which gives the latest information concerning this subject:

The passage below is extracted from the daily newspaper *Hürriyet*:

'IT IS SAID THAT THE HUMAN BODY WHICH WORKS AS AN ANTENNA IS RADIATING A CURRENT, WHICH COULD TRANSFER THE THOUGHTS OVER THOUSANDS OF KILOMETERS...

Los Angeles, (California) AP

Evidence that the human body may serve as the antenna and generate the power needed to transmit thoughts over thousands of miles was reported yesterday by Russian and American scientists.

Prof Dr. M. Kogan of the Popov Institute for the Study of radio Electronics and Communications in Moscow said the conclusions based on 1966 and 1967 experiments indicate thoughts may be conveyed by extremely long magnetic waves with crests ranging from twenty five to one thousand miles apart.

Kogan said in a paper given at a symposium on extra-sensory perception sponsored by the University of California at Los Angeles that 'Telepathy via the electromagnetic field is possible in theory over any distance'.

Meanwhile, Dr. Thelma Moss, Assistant Professor of Medical Psychology at the University of California told the symposium that through their experiments, they have obtained findings very similar to Dr. Kogan's.

According to Kogan, the calculations indicate that the human body generates four to five times more the electrical current he thinks would be needed for long-distance telepathy.”

* * *

As you can see, by showing you one of the most important news from latest years, we have managed to reveal the fact that the world of science has accepted the reality that the human brain produces electro magnetic waves continuously.

231

The detailed information concerning the kind of waves produced by the human brain and the activities of the brain made for this purpose can be found in our book titled **‘Prayer and Zhikr’**.

So, whenever an individual repeats a certain word or a group of words continuously, the electromagnetic waves that he radiates are then transformed into a kind of chipper. In this way, he would establish some kind of contact with that particular **JINNI** whose structure is close to that of the chipper.

As a result of this contact, the electromagnetic waves whose structure is closest to that chipper affect that **JINNI**. Whenever these waves are arranged in good order, they can force the **JINNI** concerned to do whatever the individual wants him to do.

* * *

As the old people say, if the individual goes on repeating this prayer and in spite of that, the **JINNI** still does not obey that order, then the **JINNI** gets burned!’

Now, let us explain what this means:

-Yes, whenever the human being carries on to repeat a certain word or groups of words, the electromagnetic waves that is radiated through his brain will then force the **JINNI** compatible with that wavelength to do whatever is necessary to perform the desired task. However, if the **JINNI** does not implement this task, the electromagnetic power radiated by that person who carries on to repeat these words and prayers will eventually cause that **JINNI** to get destroyed whose structure as we explained before is made of certain rays. To put it more bluntly, the **JINNI** will burn.

This situation is very similar to the case where broadcasting made from a radio station transmitted at low frequency becomes disturbed by the broadcasting made from another station transmitted at a more powerful frequency. In other words, the electromagnetic waves distributed by the high frequency radio station distort the waves of the low frequency radio station. In the same way, the electromagnetic waves produced by an individual as a result of the practices he engages himself with will cause the **JINNS** to die.

Therefore, the **JINNS** are forced to obey the orders given by those individuals who have become more powerful after making certain practices and as a result radiate strong electromagnetic waves which could burn them. Whether they want it or not, being under the influence of the event called 'witchcraft', the **JINNS** are obliged to obey the orders of such individuals!

I wonder if we could explain it...

* * *

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN



THE EFFECT OF RECITING PRAYERS ON THE JINNS

234

In general, both in Turkey and in many other Islamic nations, the people who have been possessed by a **JINNI** or by a few **JINNS** for some reason try to save themselves from such troubles by means of **'reading'**, which is an act that is usually carried out by someone who reads special prayers on people in order that the **JINNS** can run away.

Those people whose fame is widespread in some areas as *'Hodja* (Religious cleric) dealing with the **JINNS'** or the sheikhs of various sects cure these people simply by reading prayers onto them. In other words, they save them from the influence of the **JINNS**.

Some of these can really cure the people by **'reading'** prayers onto them and in return of this favour, they would neither charge any money nor accept any gift from them for what they have done.

On the other hand, despite their limited knowledge, there are many others exploiting everyone by doing this activity just for the money.

Here, we should emphasize an important point that those who are genuine experts in this field will never expect to get anything in return of this favour, whether it is a gift or some money. Those who obtain anything in this way are usually the exploiters of this field.

* * *

So, what kind of situation would arise from the activity of 'reading', so that the **JINNS** could release the individuals whom they've possessed and take their hands off from them completely?

Now, let us try to explain this as much as we can.

235

In the previous sections, we had explained that the structures of **JINNS** were made up of light rays.

We had also explained that the humans were made up of rays and the human body is a kind of structure which is in the process of spreading around some various rays at every single moment.

As we have already mentioned in the chapter on the subject concerning the '**WITCHCRAFT**', these rays that are being broadcasted by the human being at every single moment can be made focused to a certain point simply by repeating certain words or groups of words. As a result of this focusing, the person who is intended to be put under magic are continuously being transmitted with such rays, which will act as effective impulses and this situation would influence that person.

For these rays there is no distance limit and therefore they can reach any desired point. As you might recall, we have already given information in the previous chapter on the

subject of speed and the structure of these rays; they are completely free from the limitations of place or time.

Therefore, whenever an individual is possessed by the **JINNS** and then taken to the presence of a person who will carry out the act of **'reading'** on him, the first thing that needs to be determined is the true identity and the state of that **JINNI** who has possessed him.

After that stage, the **JINNI** is ordered to release that individual. However, whether that **JINNI** will accept this order or not is still doubtful.

After that, the individual begins to **'read'**. What this means is that by repeating certain words or groups of words, he starts to distribute rays, which are going to effect and damage the structure of that **JINNI**. At this point, he uses his brain as if it were a laser gun and starts shooting at that **JINNI!**

236

In a situation like this, there are two choices for that **JINNI**; that is either to possess the person who carries on with the reading process by making him completely dependant on itself or to obey the orders given by him.

In addition to that, there is a third way and that is to die! This situation is called among the people as **'burning'**! What this means is that, if the **JINN** do not stop dominating that person, then getting burned and facing with death will be out of question for that **JINNI**.

In most cases, the event concludes with the death or the **'burning'** of the **JINN** as pointed out in the above statement. So, in this way the individual is finally saved!

Sometimes, another **JINNI** from the family of the same **JINN** gets involved in the event and this could result with the death of two or three other **JINNS**.

* * *

Today, many of the cases linked with people's frustrations, oppressively boring situations creating the feeling of being drowned, seeing and hearing various things, the women's cases where they wash themselves up too frequently and many other similar situations with a very high percentage are all caused by the **JINNS**. However, this situation has not yet been determined by the medical science. Therefore, as the medicine tries to cure these symptoms by means of various tranquilizers, these only have temporary effects. In most cases, such kind of treatments does not give satisfactory results.

237

* * *

In order to get a satisfactory result from these situations, there is only one thing that the world of medicine need to do and that is to accept the existence of the JINNS and then learn how to combat with them using scientific methods.

Otherwise, it would be impossible to achieve the desired results through electro-shock or with some tranquilizers. As a result, the people will start feeling rather distant from medical science as they will try to keep away from medicine and will run after some *Hodjas* (Religious Clerics) who will simply take advantage of them.

* * *



THE TRICKERY OF REINCARNATION (TANASUKH)

238

While we were explaining the methods on how the **JINNS** did fool the people through non-Islamic ways, we had briefly mentioned the concept of '**Reincarnation**', which is a view that is originally named as '**Tanasukh**' and told that we would be going over this subject more extensively in the coming chapters.

* * *

Those who have put forth the view of **reincarnation** claim the following:

The spirits have been created in the past eternity, then put into physical bodies for the evolution process and then they've been sent to the world.

However, not all the spirits are equal in terms of qualities such as the power, the strength, level of comprehension, perception and the ability to evaluate. In other words, the spirits are created unfairly or they came into existence all by themselves.

Therefore; although the amount of lifetime a spirit would spend in the world could be as much as 50, 60 or 70 years, this period is certainly not good enough for its development.

For this reason, soon after its death, the spirit lives in a certain place within the universe of the spirits for a certain time!

Afterwards, the spirit comes back to the world once again to continue from where it has left and goes on living in another physical body with a different personality.

* * *

239

As soon as the life of spirit comes to the end, it dies again! After that, it ascends to a higher plane and waits there before coming back for another time!

After that, it comes back to the world again so that it can be trained for another evolutionary process!

* * *

This process continues until it finally becomes perfect and reaches the peak level!

* * *

Whenever it becomes a perfect spirit, then it never returns to the world ever again. However this time, it attempts to advance itself to be a more perfect being in other realms.

* * *

This is a process that goes on continuously.

* * *

Since the ancient times, those who believed in the idea of **reincarnation**, particularly those in India and the surrounding regions have lived under the concept of '**Tanasukh**' for thousands of years.

This is a kind of thinking that is commonly accepted by the people whose level of knowledge is below the average and limited. They support this idea because their brain structure is simply unsuitable to understand this reality since they have a rather primitive way of thinking.

However, in the above paragraph, when we say 'below the average', what we mean is that the capacity of that person in this particular field is below the average. Because, if an individual is unable to make progress in a certain field, this simply does not mean that he is unable to advance in other fields too! In fact, those who have read carefully what we have written about the structure of the brain in the chapter titled the 'body' under the section named the 'human being' will of course understand what we mean by the above statement.

240

Whenever we think about those people who believe in the idea of reincarnation, we can immediately determine without any difficulty whatsoever that 99% of these people are in contact with the spirits or more realistically, they are in touch with the **JINNS** and they get this idea from them.

As we have already mentioned before, the **JINNS** contact with the humans by presenting themselves as the spirits of various individuals and in this manner they can fool them. At the beginning, they inspire individuals by nice things and then display some extraordinary events, so that they can connect these people to themselves.

* * *

However, as we have stated before, in the second stage things start to change and for that reason the actual motive behind their relationship with these people becomes even more evident.

The **JINNS** contact with the people under the name **SPIRIT** purely for the purpose of diverging them to wrong beliefs so that in the end, they can take away their 'faith and trust' from them completely.

For this reason, people who are in touch with the **JINNS** are deviated towards wrong beliefs, especially on two main subjects connected with the faith.

241

* * *

Spiritualism is the name given to all those systems of belief that accept the existence of dimensions beyond the material while **Spiritism** is the name given to a school of thought whose members deal with calling and communicating with the spirits.

So, after the second stage, those who are in contact with the **JINNS**, in other words the people dealing with the spirits face with two divergences of belief which are as follows:

1. Reincarnation, in other words tanasukh!

2. Accepting the pantheist point of view as 'Uluhiyyah' (Divine Existence).

In this section, we shall try to explain the first one for the moment.

First of all, let us examine the quotations extracted from the *Koran* by those people who promote the '**Reincarnationist**'

point of view among the Muslim communities in order that they can impose their ideas onto them:

* * *

These people who defend the idea of ‘**rebirth**’ of the soul in another body have been fooled by the **JINNS** and in order to prove their arguments more effectively, they adhere themselves to the verses mentioned below:

1. HOW CAN YOU REJECT THE FAITH IN ALLAH? WHEN YOU WERE DEAD HE GAVE LIFE TO YOU! THEN HE WILL GIVE YOU DEATH, THEN LIFE AGAIN, AND THEN YOU SHALL BE BROUGHT BACK TO HIM.

(Chapter: 2, Verse No: 28)

2. YOU CAUSE THE NIGHT TO PASS INTO THE DAY AND YOU CAUSE THE DAY TO PASS INTO THE NIGHT. YOU BRING THE LIVING OUT OF THE DEAD AND YOU BRING OUT THE DEAD FROM THE LIVING; AND YOU GIVE SUSTENANCE TO WHOM YOU CHOOSE WITHOUT MEASURE.

(Chapter: 3, Verse No: 27)

3. (Prophet Noah continues to address his community :)

AND ALLAH HAS CAUSED YOU TO GROW OUT OF THE EARTH AS A GROWTH. AND AFTERWARD ALLAH WILL MAKE YOU RETURN INTO THE EARTH AND WILL RAISE YOU FORTH AGAIN, A (NEW) FORTHBRINGING. AND ALLAH HAS MADE THE EARTH A WIDE EXPANSE FOR YOU, SO THAT YE MAY GO ABOUT THEREIN, IN ITS SPACIOUS ROADS.

(Chapter: 71- Verse No: 17/18/19/20)

So, these are some of the translations extracted from the verses in Koran that people who believe in **reincarnation** use

as evidence so that they can prove their arguments and draw the Islamic community to their sides. However, as we shall explain these verses in more detail, the amount of effort they have spent and how they have degenerated the meaning will become even more apparent.

* * *



THE EXPLANATION OF THESE VERSES

1. The meaning of the 1st verse is as follows:

You; the mankind! How can you swear at **'ALLAH'**; meaning that how can you try to conceal the truth of the concept of **'ALLAH'**? **WHEN YOU WERE DEAD**; that means while your consciousness had not been formed and while you were unable to rule your body, **ALLAH GAVE LIFE TO YOU**; that means **HE** formed your consciousness and made you aware so that you have full control over your body. **THEN HE WILL GIVE YOU DEATH**, which means that ALLAH will interrupt your connection with the physical body in which you have found yourselves in and then will detach your consciousness from the biological body. **THEN HE WILL GIVE YOU LIFE AGAIN**, which means that after you become unable to use the biological body, your consciousness will have the use of the astral body and in this manner you will be able to pass over to a new dimension of life where you will stay until the doomsday; **AND THEN YOU SHALL BE BROUGHT BACK TO HIM**, which means that you will rise to upper dimensions where coming back is out of the question and in this way you

will attain HIM in your essence and you will be reunited with ALLAH.

* * *

As we have stated above, when this verse is examined thoroughly, it would be seen that nothing is mentioned either on the subject of coming back to the world several times or coming and going back to the world countless times until the true perfection is reached.

However, if going and coming back countless times was the case as they had claimed, then this situation would have definitely be stated either in this verse or in another verse.

245

* * *

2. The meaning of the verse given above in the 2nd section is as follows:

YOU CAUSE THE NIGHT TO PASS INTO THE DAY, which means that you transform the night into the day; **YOU CAUSE THE DAY TO PASS INTO THE NIGHT** and this means that you turn the day into the night. In other words, you do not leave anything in the same state and you substitute everything with its opposite.

YOU BRING THE LIVING OUT OF THE DEAD; you put those who have not yet been limited by the physical world under the constraints of the physical world by covering them up with flesh and bones and make them exist in the world and in this way you bring out the living; and then **YOU BRING OUT THE DEAD FROM THE LIVING**; which means that you make those DIE who have been covered up in flesh and bones and seen in the physical world with a body and considered to be alive, in other words, you release them from the limitations

of the material. You give countless sustenance to those you wish.

As can be seen from this verse, in order to achieve the necessary perfection, departing from this world and coming back over and over again is never mentioned, not even a slightest indication is made to show this.

However, it is most unfortunate that these people who have been fooled by the **JINNS** in their struggles to prove their claims have changed the meanings of these verses according to their way of thinking so that these verses can be beneficial for them.

In fact, whenever these people are examined in detail, it would be seen that they do not possess the slightest knowledge neither about Islam nor about the Koran.

246

* * *

3. As for the meaning of the third mentioned verse:

AND ALLAH HAS CAUSED YOU TO GROW OUT OF THE EARTH AS A GROWTH, which means that Allah has created ADAM, your ancestor and the first human being seen on the earth from the earth; and Allah has created the parts of his body that was initially originated from the earth from a compound, which consisted of a mixture composed of minerals and water.

AND AFTERWARD ALLAH WILL MAKE YOU RETURN INTO THE EARTH; which means that Allah will interrupt your relation with the physical body and then release you from the physical limitations so that HE will transform your physical body into the earth, which is originally where it comes from. Meanwhile, you are going to continue to live your life as a

conscious being in the Berzakh (Isthmus), an area of transition.

THEN ALLAH WILL RAISE YOU FORTH AGAIN, in other words when the day of judgement (the day when people will have to face with the final results of what they've done) comes, ALLAH will raise you again. However, this time, Allah will raise you in a different manner, that is to say you would emerge by being enfolded in your material body; same as you did in the past without spending a certain period of time for your growth. Allah will create your body on the basis of your spiritual state that you had while you were put into the grave and form a NEW body for you, which would be suitable for that particular environment.

247

AND ALLAH HAS MADE THE EARTH A WIDE EXPANSE FOR YOU; in other words, ALLAH has created the planet earth in such a way that will enable you to live on it with your physical body. **SO THAT YE MAY GO ABOUT THEREIN IN ITS SPACIOUS ROADS**; meaning that you may go around and travel wherever you like in the world and live at any place you wish.

* * *

Here, we shall place the emphasis on the deeper, further meanings of two words:

In the terminology of Sufism, the word 'EARTH' refers to the MIND of the person. When the above two verses are examined with respect to this meaning, then the meaning becomes '**Allah has given you the mind as a vast area**'. In other words, we can imagine that Allah has created the mind as a large field, which consist of spacious roads, each manifesting various behaviours related to the thought so that

you can move and make progress on these expansive paths accordingly.

That is to say, the human beings have been given a structure which would enable them to progress on various ways related to the thought and in addition to that; they have been given the Koran, which shows them the *Sirat-ul Mustaqim* (The Correct Path), so that they can walk on this path that Allah is wanted.

I don't know if I could have explained how people who have been obsessed by the **JINNS** build their ideas on weak grounds simply by assuming that they would prove the reincarnation from a religious point of view.

* * *

Yes, I think that we have covered quite a substantial amount of information concerning the people who do not have sufficient knowledge especially on our modern day religion Islam as well as its holy book Koran.

* * *

Please, pay attention to the fact that while they introduce these ideas, which they have built on false foundations, they are also claiming the following:

-There is not a single verse in the Koran rejecting the reincarnation and state that there cannot be such a thing called reincarnation!

We are going to prove how false their claims really are simply by giving the meaning of only one verse even though there are several more verses on this subject.

So, here is the meaning of one of the verses found in the Koran, which rejects the view of reincarnation, namely the *tenasukh*.

“AND SAY: ‘MY LORD! I TAKE REFUGE IN YOU FROM THE EVIL SUGGESTIONS OF THE DEVILS (here, what is meant by the devils are the JINNS, which we shall explain in the following chapters). **MY LORD! I TAKE REFUGE IN YOU LEST THEY BE PRESENT WITH ME.**

FINALLY WHEN DEATH COMES TO EACH OF THEM THEY WILL SAY:

-MY LORD SEND ME BACK (to the world)! SO THAT I MAY DO BENEFICIAL WORKS IN THAT WHICH I HAVE NEGLECTED (AND LOST) IN RETURN FOR MY WHOLE LIFE.

BY NO MEANS! WHAT THEY SAY WILL NEVER COME TRUE! BEHIND THEM IS A BARRIER, THE UNIVERSE OF GRAVES UNTIL THE DAY THEY’LL BE RAISED”.

(Chapter: 23 / Verse No: 97/98/99/100)

Yes, let us now examine the meanings of the four verses we have quoted above:

In order to teach the Muslims what course of action they need to take so that they can take refuge from the **JINNS** who have devilish qualities, *Allah* tells them to say the following:

‘My Lord, I take refuge in you from these false assumptions, the false conjectures and all kinds of anxieties that will be given to me by the devils, in other words by the **JINNS** who have devilish characteristics, which would eventually lead me to deviate from the faith and the belief.

AND I TAKE REFUGE IN YOU O MY LORD FROM THEIR BEING AT MY PRESENCE; in other words, I seek refuge in you from their presence around me as well as their communications with me’.

Because they suggest me with such wrong ideas, I start to think that I would eventually come back to the world again without being aware of what is going on.

And when I die with this belief, I say **‘MY LORD SEND ME BACK TO THE WORLD! UNTIL I MAY PERFORM THE RIGHT PRACTICES IN RETURN FOR THE LIFE THAT I HAVE LOST,** so that I can die as a human being who knows the truth.

‘BUT NAY, this is what **THEY** say, in other words **the things that are said by those who believe in reincarnation are MEANINGLESS.**

250

IN FRONT OF THEM there is the **BARZAKH** (Isthmus), which will **PREVENT THEM FROM RISING** until the resurrection day. So, until the day of judgement when all the humans will be made to rise for questioning with a new formation, there will be a barrier in front of them, which acts as the place of transition. Soon after the relationship with the physical body is cut off, the spirits cannot have contact with the physical world anymore and therefore, the universe in which they are now living will be subject to special conditions that are unique to that environment. In the Islamic world, this is also named as the universe of the grave.

So, this is the interpretation of one of the verses, which demonstrates that there would be no **reincarnation.**

Now, let us come to the other methods which they employ to prove the reincarnation.

However, we should state once again that the main reason why these subjects could not be explained more openly is because the people who were influenced by the **JINNS** had fears that they will be ridiculed and therefore they refrained themselves from talking about them.

On the other hand, as you shall see from the way we can refute their evidences, as soon as the existence of **JINNS** is declared and accepted by them, the inside story behind the mystery of these complex events will become even more clear.

If after this point the person still keeps on insisting on these claims, then this would simply be regarded as a clear indication that he does not want to take back what he has said.

251

* * *

Apart from religious methods, other evidences that are put forth by those who believe in **reincarnation** can be stated in the following four groups:

- a) The Dreams.
- b) The Déjà Vu Experiences.
- c) Ecmnesia (Loss of memory).
- d) Direct remembrance of the past lives.

Let us now show how these cannot prove reincarnation one after the other:

* * *

A) DREAMS

During the sleep, a human being is set free from the limitations of the five senses in proportion with the sensitivity of the brain and as a result starts to ascend. This ascension can be either **vertical** or **horizontal**.

If the ascension of the individual takes place horizontally, then depending on how much he could use his power to release himself from the limitations of the five senses, (and indeed many factors play a role here) the individual can go around the world and visit places where he had never ever seen before. In this way, he may also get himself acquainted with those places.

252

As a matter of fact, it is in this level where he would be meeting with the **JINNS**.

* * *

On this occasion, I would like to give an example from my own life. In 1965, while I was going for Hajj (Pilgrimage to Mecca) by using the auto-route, I went to the South East of Turkey and I stopped by in a place called Gaziantep. While I was there, I went to see the Colonel N. who was a judge in the army and was one of my close friend's uncle in law. When I went there and saw the premises of the military barracks and its garden, I was very much surprised, because I knew definitely that I had seen that place before.

Now, those who believe in reincarnation immediately interpret this event according to their way of thinking and they would say 'It is most certain that in your previous life, you were either an army officer or a soldier and you must have done your military service there, which is why you can remember that place'.

In fact, what has been sighted does not have any connection with what they claim. Because, even though I cannot state an exact date when I had seen that dream, I can still remember what I had seen on that very day in my dream very clearly. If it was possible to live in that place before, then surely there must have been some changes taken place there since that time.

As we have already said, the situation is very simple and clear to understand.

During the sleep, the upper structure, which is also referred as **'the human'** or the **'astral body'** leaves the physical body and enters the astral plane, making a virtual tour horizontally and see those places mentioned above. This is the reason why I have remembered those places.

253

As a matter of fact, apart from all this, whether they maybe from the past or from the future, many of our dreams that we see become true in exactly the same manner as we have told above.

So, the dreams that belong to this category always take place during the sleep and they are the result of the upper structure, which leaves the body in a horizontal fashion. The origin of this incident is referred to as **'ruyat'**, which is a word that comes from Arabic and it means **'sighting'**.

Let us now talk about going around in a vertical fashion or the vertical ascension.

In order to explain this in more detail, let us start by giving an example.

As we have explained scientifically in the beginning, the concept of **time and place** is something, which is **relative**. In

other words, it is something that exists **relative to** me, to you or to us.

* * *

For example, in an infinitely big desert, you are walking in the middle of a caravan, which is so long that it is impossible to see the beginning and the end. The places that you can see and recognize are limited to a distance of only a few meters within the scope of your eye sight.

Now, the place that you have passed through within that certain period of time, in other words the place that you have seen within this particular hour would be the **'past'** for you soon after that time have passed. The field that you have entered in that particular instant would then be the **'present'** for you while it was the **'future'** only a few moments ago.

254

Similarly, as for someone coming after you, the place where you stop now would be regarded as the **'future'** for him and the place where he is at that moment would be regarded as the **'instant that is being lived'** for him; whereas in actual fact, that place has already become the **'past'** for you.

If this is the situation, then consider the scenario of a moving helicopter taking you from the ground and starting to climb you up towards the sky vertically. What will happen then?

While the area you had previously seen within a few hundred meters in just one hour were regarded as the **'instant that you lived'**, the place you are seeing now as you get higher and higher would be the area which covers the **'instant that is being lived'**. In this sense, the **'past'** and the **'present'** start to diminish while the **'instant that is being lived'** keeps on increasing.

In the end, if it could have been possible for you to climb, you would then reach such a point that you would be able to see the whole caravan that is infinitely long in an infinite desert.

This means that for the people in the caravan, there is the concept of **'place'** and **'time'**. However, you have been saved from this limitation! Your ascension makes it possible that you are no longer subject to this restriction.

So, in the case of vertical ascension, the human being obtains the knowledge which will be necessary for the past as well as for the future with respect to the proportion he can save himself from the physical limitations imposed on him, although we do not have sufficient information on how this vertical ascension can take place in the dream.

255

* * *

According to the law which asserts that **'Nothing will ever come into existence without any reason and whatever has come into existence will never disappear'**, we describe the past as something that is passed with respect to our present situation. Therefore, all of these events which appear to have occurred in the space exist in the form of certain wavelengths.

If we had a powerful radio in our hands that is capable of interpreting these waves into signals that our ears can analyze and hear or if we had a television set that could show these waves to our eyes, we would then be able to see all the past as if we were living in it.

Likewise, the future descends from the sky, from the upper heavens in the form of waves at every instant and in the Islamic terminology; heaven is used to describe the levels, which exists under various characteristics at different heights.

In other words, depending on the extent of the vertical ascension, the human being could obtain a vision about the nature of the 'past' as well as the 'future' and from this point onwards, all of these things will be regarded as the dimension of the 'instant that is being lived' for him.

This is the main reason why some people make certain vertical ascensions in their dreams and go to those times so that they can find themselves experiencing that particular moment and the event almost as if they are living in it. Afterwards, when they come down to the earth, that is to say whenever they wake up in the dimension of the physical body, they can recount whatever has happened.

Anyone who believes in reincarnation and observes these events in an objective manner would immediately attribute this event to the previous life of that person and comment further that the subject individual has remembered his previous life. However, it is most certain that the event does not have any connection whatsoever with something that has been lived in the past.

256

B) THE DÉJÀ VU EXPERIENCES

Similarly, the déjà vu events take place in the same manner as we have explained above.

In other words, they are type of events that are manifested in such a way that the individual sees the places and experience the events that he had never ever seen before and then forgets them completely.

Apart from all this, as well as in other forms of dreams, it is possible that the scenes that have been set up by the **JINNS**

for the individual can also be experienced without the individual's awareness.

C) ECMNESIA (Loss of Memory)

In this event, by using the hypnosis as a means of time travel, the person has been put to sleep and sent back in time to a period of 5-10 or 40-50 years before so that he can be asked to tell about the events that took place in his life at that particular time.

* * *

257

However, if the person hypnotized is sent to a time period that is below his current age, for example to a period of 100-200 years before he was even born, then this is simply regarded as a situation whereby rather than his own life, he starts to talk about the life of another person who lived at a different place almost as if he himself had lived it.

* * *

So what is the reality behind this event? Well, that is very simple!

We had already mentioned that during all those spirit channelling sessions where contacting with a spirit is assumed to have taken place does not in fact take place at all as the actual contact is only made with a **JINNI** that is compatible with the structure of the sleeping person rather than a spirit. We had also mentioned that the life span of the **JINNS** is 10-15 times more than that of the humans. What's more is that there are even those ones who were born 1350 years before and are still living.

Moreover, many of the things which are secret to us are not secret for them because they have the vision to grasp these.

Now, after bringing this matter to our attention, let us give an explanation on how this event takes place:

From the moment the person is put to sleep, the circuits of the brain connected with the thought and reasoning processes is no longer effective as it is incapable of controlling the conscious and therefore the brain becomes prone to all kinds of stimuli and influences.

While being under this condition, the body, together with all its functions goes under the influence of a **JINNI** whose frequency is most compatible with that person's structure. **From that moment onwards, we are no longer in touch with that individual anymore who was present there, however there is a JINNI there who is in touch with us.**

258

After this point, no matter how much you try to take that individual to the past, you will encounter that **JINNI** all the time and by determining the past as well as the near future, which for that **JINNI** is not a secret at all, he will be able to answer all your questions.

However, let us assume that we are told 'Well, whenever we go to a period before the birth of that individual, then we do come across to some other personality'. This is the personality of that individual's spirit who lived before in the body of other person! So, this is the proof that the spirit of the same human being lives in other bodies with different personalities'.

* * *

Then, we will give the following answer:

However, as soon as the dimension or the period of time before the life of the subject (the sleeping person) is experienced, rather than that individual, the **JINN** you have been in touch starts to give you examples from the life of another person who happened to live somewhere else.

Meanwhile, all kinds of sad and happy reactions observed in the body of the subject person and are assumed to have been experienced in those old days are all because of the irritations produced in his brain by the **JINN**.

259

In order to prove our point, we can give the example of computers which are used to stimulate sensory areas of the brain with pulses of electrical signals directed to the specific regions of the brain connected with the feeling of sorrow, happiness, laughing and crying. These pulses when given appropriately stimulate an electrochemical response from the targeted cells, which ripples across the brain, making the individual cry or laugh. The world of medical science is already aware of this situation.

So, under such cases, by sending impulses to the brain of the sleeping person, the **JINNS** can create the kind of behaviour patterns that is needed.

However, those people who witness this incident from outside cannot really understand what is going on and they simply assume that this process takes place owing to the conditions in which the person sent to sleep lives under.

A few years ago, a **JINNI** who had said '**I am an angel**' to a group in Ankara came to them and said that his name was '**Basheer-al Kiraam**'. He told them in detail all the stages of the battle which took place between *Sultan Alparslan* and *Romanos Diogenes* in 1071. This was a truly amazing event.

This angel has told them how the war was carried out and the conversations which took place between Alparslan and Diogenes from their own mouths, in their own languages with special dialects and the pronunciations they use. After repeating these dialogues, the angel translated everything to them. The people who were present there in that session were all fascinated with this event and because of that reason, some of them were even connected to this angel in such a deep way that they almost accepted that angel as a god to be worshipped.

For this reason, in such events, after the subject is put to sleep, always a **JINNI** will appear in front of the operator namely the person who does the hypnosis as well as those who observe this event and it is this **JINNI** who answers all their questions.

260

This is the main reason why there is no such a thing as reincarnation and the truth behind all these similar scenes takes place in the same way as we have described.

Finally, let us come to the matter that is laid down as the fourth claim, which refers to the case of the living people who remember their past lives.

D) THE CASES OF LIVING PEOPLE WHO REMEMBER THEIR PAST LIVES

Here we are again, with another phenomenon that relates to the obvious reality; **'CONNECTIONS WITH THE JINNS'!**

Many elderly people especially those from Anatolia are fully aware that most events they face with are adopted in such a

modernized way that they are ideas relating to the cases of reincarnation, which is indeed a divergence from the truth.

If you can remember, we have taken our time to explain our views on this matter until now, because it had a very close relation with the subject of **'human beings who are totally unaware of getting into the position of complete subservience to the JINNS and how JINNS can control most of these situations'**. Let us now explain:

In the case of Ecmnesia that we have mentioned above, the individual did actually remember his past life. Here, the same story about the past life is being repeated again. However, this time round, the incident has nothing to do with the individual's sleep state, but it is rather connected with his normal awakened state.

261

So, what does really happen, what makes this individual speak about the past lives?

This is very simple to explain.

Being unaware of what is really happening; one of the **JINNS** who is present there starts to take that individual's brain into his possession. By means of using the brain of that person, the **JINN** then starts to talk from the mouth of that person and gives information about the life of another person who had lived in that neighbourhood sometime in the past. The **JINN** carries on narrating his story from the tongue of that person who lived at that time period as if that individual is doing the talking. In other words, this individual lives such a life style that feels like a robot which is being controlled by the **JINN** most of the time.

* * *

Because other people who are present there are limited in terms of using their five senses, they cannot actually see that this **JINNI** is in the process of dominating that individual. Therefore, they cannot discover the truth behind all these events, so in the end they try to explain this situation simply as an event connected with reincarnation.

* * *

As a conclusion, we would like to say that all these examples which have been pointed out so far on this subject do not mean anything at all and since we explained the subject relating to the structure of these beings named as **JINNS** in a scientific manner, the reality of this matter could be understood properly.

262

For this reason, we wish to conclude that all these things that are being said under different titles such as spiritualism, parapsychology or some other concept relating to similar meanings are indeed all different versions of the same thing. These are all affairs observed in a different way each time as they are connected with the phenomenon of the **JINNS** who are known to mankind since the old times and because their reality could not be grasped fully, their existence is being denied in our present time.

Whether in the séances of spiritism or in any other similar ways, benefiting from the **JINNS** is never ever possible. Indeed, there is no doubt whatsoever that they speak correctly up to a certain degree, but after sometime, they start fooling the people and then disappoint those who have been inclined towards them favourably. However, the human beings cannot be aware of this reality easily due to their structure.

* * *

As we have already pointed out before, whenever you examine those people who believe in the **JINNS**, it becomes evident that they have one thing in common.

Every one of them is curious, good willed and they like to do research, but they have no knowledge whatsoever as regards religion, especially on Islam. Most important of all, they deny the reality of '**JINNS**' which has an important place in the 'Koran' and therefore they are being fooled by the '**JINNS**' who communicate with them under the name of '**SPIRIT**' which is a fact that cannot be denied.

263

Today, in Turkey there are so many associations who deal with spiritualism or so to speak calling and communicating with the spirits and there are those invisible beings who contact with these associations. However, they always seem to work secretly behind the scenes which cannot be noticed to outsiders. As a matter of fact, they think that they are in fact talking with these **ALIENS** at present and receive declarations from them.

Those who do not believe in them are never accepted, either among themselves or to take part in their sessions. If, by accident someone comes along and joins them, they never let him ask any questions or argue with that person in any way.

If they do so, the **JINNS** with whom these associations are in contact with realize very well that their lies would become obvious. For this reason, they struggle to save their status by trying not to get degraded in any way in the eyes of those who believe in them.

* * *



OUR SUBJECT IS THE 'ALIENS'

In recent years there has been much debate on the issue of **'Flying Saucers'**, which has become one of the most popular subject of all times, not only within the members of the public but also within the intellectual circles who talk frequently about it and for this reason everybody has become curious with this subject.

264

* * *

It is being argued by various groups that these flying saucers that are seen particularly in America and various regions of Europe do carry the beings that live in other planets and this is the way how they visit our world as they want to communicate with the people.

There are various points of view regarding these **'unknown flying objects'**, which in the Western world are named as **'UFO'**, which is the abbreviation of **'Unidentified Flying Objects'**.

Even the most prestigious magazines and newspapers published in America as well as in Europe, news and interviews concerning this subject appear quite often. These

publications mention extensively about the memories of those individuals who have seen the flying saucers and the beings coming out from them.

Even if we accept that 95% of the information we have in our hands at present on this subject is some kind of a trick; that is to say even if we assume that these things that are seen by those individuals are actually nothing other than the shooting stars, the clusters of clouds, the air balloons or some similar scenes, the remaining 5% still represents quite a big part, which would be sufficient to make us accept this reality. This is because the state of those individuals who have seen these events and the shapes in which these objects have been seen would make this possible.

265

* * *

The existence of a special 'UFO' department in United States of America's Ministry of Defence simply shows that there is a department that deals with flying saucers in particular and the discovery of photos relating to these points out the fact that this is quite a serious issue indeed.

Recently, in an interview that has taken place with the daily newspaper *Cumhuriyet*, which mentions a story about a teacher who had seen a flying saucer while he was in the classroom with his students. According to the teacher, the arrival of this flying saucer happened in such a way that nobody else present there in the classroom could see it other than himself and what's more is that there were some kind of individuals coming out from it. Let us now give to our readers some passages from this interview. The reporter Mr. Turhan ILGAZ tells this in the following way:

‘Approximately two years ago, a teacher was doing an exam in the Pangaltı Armenian High School. After she had handed out the questions to the students, she sits down at her desk and all of a sudden a scene appears in the side walls of the classroom.

She says that ‘it was all like a movie. There, in front of me was a flying saucer. Then, a man who looked just like us came out from it’.

The woman who actually sees this saucer is a medium and she communicates with the newcomer by means of using her thoughts. After this meeting, the newcomer meets with her on many more occasions.

266

So, this is one of the ways experienced by us concerning the flying saucers.

Well, in that case, what is the truth behind all these events?

Do flying saucers ever exist?

Are there any beings in the other planets from the race of humankind?

Are there any individuals who live in distant planets and do they ever get in touch with the humans or want to do so? Or else, are they different beings?

* * *

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN



NO SCIENTIST EVER EXIST ON THE SUBJECT OF THE ALIENS

268

Are there any **ALIENS**, do they really exist or not?

This is surely one of the most interesting subjects of the present day!

And the biggest mistake that is being made on this subject is to **'QUESTION THE SCIENTISTS!'** about this matter.

The subject of **ALIENS** should never be asked to the scientists!

There isn't any scientist neither in **TURKEY** nor in the whole **WORLD** who would be able to answer the questions relating to the issue of the **ALIENS!** Whoever seeks advice from the scientists on this matter will surely be mistaken!

WHY?

Let us know first of all that **'science'** is formed within a particular system, which relies on using objects as well as the data already in hand. Of course, there are special people who would examine those data and the objects in detail. After doing an extensive research on the given data and the objects they use, these people reach a definite conclusion and

therefore they establish a system, which would finally produce that particular branch of science.

However, the people who create that branch of science are named as the scientists who are specialised on that given subject.

Let us explain this by an example.

As we already know, the human body exists, because there are those people who conduct researches on it to find out the way how it works and by doing all these studies, they have produced a branch of science. Therefore the data is already available and the system that has been formed as a result of doing these researches is in hand! This means that there is a 'SCIENTIST' whose field of specialisation is the function of the human body! In other words, what we have are the professionals of medical science as well as the doctors who carry out researches on the subject of the human body.

269

Do we have all the data and the relevant objects concerning the aliens in our hands? Has there been any systematic research carried out on these subjects that we already have in our hand? Are there any individuals who have followed a systematic line of investigation on these matters and then determined how they really function?

Of course, the answer to all of these questions is NO!

If that's the case, then there is neither a branch of science dealing with the **ALIENS** nor is there a SCIENTIST!

If you wish, you can ask about this point to a doctor or a professor of law. You can also direct your question to an ASTRONOMY professor!

Needless to say, they are all equal individuals who have the same level of knowledge on this particular subject despite the fact that they have all become professors in their own branches!

One of them is a professor on the subject of law; the other one is a professor on human body and the other one is a professor studying the stars, their positions and characteristics of their structure!

However, they can never be a professor on the subject of the **ALIENS!**

This is not only the issue in Turkey but the whole world is in the same category!

270

For an object that does not exist, there will be absolutely no scientist also! The experts of astronomy and the professors in this particular field therefore can never be designated as scientists on the subject of the **'ALIENS'** for this is totally unacceptable under any circumstances.

After emphasizing this matter in an explicit manner, let us all pay attention to the following point.

In recent years, there have been 2 flash incidents occurred relating to this subject. One of these is the publications made by the Russian TASS news agency, which claimed that in a city in Russia, the children have met with beings from outer space!

The other incident is the one that refers to the big drawings that have appeared in the grain fields of southern England.

The following article has been extracted from the Magazine of Science and Technology that is partly attached to the newspaper *Cumhuriyet* dated 5th of October 1991.

THE DEFENDERS OF THE UFO'S HAVE BEEN CAUGHT

In England, those who have made the heavenly drawings and the lines in the wheat fields have come out. Here is the story of this event, which made the scientists work hard and which was owned by the defenders of the UFO'S.

'This is without doubt the most wonderful moment of my research' marvelled Pat Delgado, the famous researcher on UFO's who was saying the following after he had seen the wheat field in Sevenoaks, England: 'No human could have done this'.

271

Delgado was saying these by gazing at the wheat plants that were created in such a perfect way. The plants had been laid clockwise on the ground in the shape of an almost perfect circle. There were other shapes that were seen as the elongations of this circle: Antennas, a semi circle and a line which was in the form of a strip.

The circles that were seen in Sevenoaks were the last of the hundreds of similar shapes that had been seen in Southern England since the last three years. For Delgado, who has been researching and writing on this subject, these circles were the perfect proof showing the existence of a higher level of intelligence.

However, the joy of Delgado did not last long. Graham Brough, a reporter from the Today newspaper had watched two landscape painters making up these drawings. David Chorley, aged 62 and Douglas Bower aged 67 had created the Sevenoaks circle while Brough was with them all through the process. Moreover, the duo revealed that for the past 13 years, they have been sneaking around southern England,

fashioning as many as 25 to 30 new circles each growing season.

The explanations of these two people had clarified the mystery with which the whole of England and the world had been interested. Many interesting ideas had been put forth about how these circles on the ground were formed. The flying saucers, the electromagnetic field and the microwaves in the atmosphere were only a few of them.

Actually, the method used by these two hoaxers did not have any relation with extraordinary powers. They were using a wooden plank with a length of 1.2 meters and a ball of string. Bower was standing at the centre of the field that they've chosen and holding the plank in an upright position. The rope was tied to the wooden stick at the height of a knee. When Chorley turned around, Bower and holding the rope very tight, then the wheat plants were going down sideways.

272

Chorley and Bower had created their first drawing in the field in 1978. By making the wheat plants lean sideways, their aim was to give the impression that the UFO's had landed on that field. However, for three years long their works could not catch the attention of anyone. These shapes were spotted in the press for the first time in 1981. The reason why these two men had confessed what they've done was due to the fact that the researchers on this subject had asked the government to give them some financial support.

So, are we going to categorize those who have seen these sightings as people who are having **'Psychological Disorders'** or are they people who are **'extremely sensitive in terms of their psychology'** ? Certainly not!

Well, if that is the case then attributing human motivations as most astrologers do to the planets like VENUS, which is observed only for about two hours at the sunset, is indeed a baseless false claim and therefore it has no meaning for us.

What is most definite is that by whatever name they be called, there are certain number of beings either living in our solar system among us or in the atmosphere and they transmit us with certain images from time to time.

However, our biggest mistake regarding this subject comes from our persistent behaviour that we can only accept the existence of these beings by using our five senses as we simply assume that nothing else would perceive them.

273

There is no doubt that centuries we had left behind have given us a clear indication that so many things do exist and we cannot simply identify these by our five senses. Even through the technologies that we have developed in time, we are still obliged to accept the reality that all those things whose existences we have once denied in the past and accepted as '**non-existent**', we now have to admit that they are in fact '**existent**'. However, we never learn any lessons from these and we still try to deny or interpret the things which we cannot determine by our five senses as well as by means of the technology that we have already in hand in quite an ambiguous way. Indeed, this is a big shame.

What are these extraterrestrial beings we name as the '**ALIENS**'?

Until today, there has been no case whereby a single alien is caught by us so that we could carry out sufficient investigations on these beings. For this reason, nobody has a valid evidence to support their claim or prove their ideas that

there are aliens. As we have already mentioned at the beginning, there will be no specialist people on the subject of these beings.

However, it is impossible for us to accept the reality that these beings were said to be absolutely nonexistent some fifty years ago and then all of a sudden in a period of time, they appeared in a miraculous way.

On the other hand, since many centuries, it has been mentioned that there are various beings inhabiting this world along with the humans. While some communities named them as the **'ghosts'**, some of them named them as the **'spirits'** or the **'fairies'** and some of them named them as the **'JINNS'** or the **'giants'**.

274

These beings make themselves known by various characteristics that they possess and even in some cases they look as if they were helping the people. However, sometimes they behave in such a way that they put pressure on the human being's free will. During the period when the Koran had ascended, these beings were also named as the **'JINN'**.

* * *

No matter what the degree of your cultural and educational level is or by whatever sort of conditionings you have blocked yourself with, there is always one fact, which cannot be denied. This is the fact that in this world, there are also various beings along with the humans, which cannot be perceived all the time but they are acknowledged by the majority of the people under different names!

Neither the denial of the individuals would make them disappear nor would the acceptance of those individuals offer

them any benefits! What's more is that other people's denials opens much wider horizons for them!

Because, we can clearly notice that these beings make fun of people and fool all the humans simply by making them run after hopeless dreams all the time, so whatever name we give to them, they are indeed sort of beings that take great pleasure from dominating the humans!

* * *

275

As a matter of fact, we cannot expect that these beings who are free from the limitations of a physical body cannot behave in some other way towards the humans who are limited with their physical body! As there are countless people within their reach whom they can fool and make fun of, they would of course make use of this opportunity. It is simply impossible to think the opposite.

As a matter of fact, the Koran points out to this reality in the 128th verse of the 6th Chapter:

“YOU! THE JINN COMMUNITY YOU HAVE TAKEN THE MAJORITY OF THE HUMANS UNDER YOUR DOMINATION!”

So, use whichever name you like to describe them whether it maybe **'ALIENS'** or **'JINNS'**, which is the name usually mentioned in the religious terminology and by the elderly people; you will see that one of the greatest quality of these beings is to take the humans under their domination and then drag them into false beliefs so that they display such behaviours, which are indeed in contrast with the reality.

* * *

Those beings who are referred to as **'JINNS'** cannot be seen by the naked eye or touched with the physical hand and they

approach some communities by taking into account the ideas, which are associated with social norms, local customs and traditions that are currently established in those places as well as the social conditionings that the society places the emphasis on. This is the way how they dominate the people in those places. Whoever has the tendency to become motivated for a particular subject, they occupy them with such ideas connected with that tendency and present them with visions related to that subject.

In general, they dominate a great majority of people without letting themselves known to them so that their existence is not noticeable to them.

The people whom they dominate are mostly those who claim that they have accepted the system of Islamic belief or those who do not accept this at all.

Their way of deceiving those who do not accept the Islamic belief is to impose on them with sort of beliefs, which are mainly based on the principle of coming back to the world again after death.

Indeed, one of the most enjoyable subjects for them in recent years has been the act of introducing themselves to the mankind as the beings that have come from other galaxies or systems.

In actual fact, these beings live on the earth and they occupy the planet earth's atmosphere. Because they are very clever beings and have the capacity to move and act very fast, they can deceive and fool the people very easily.

In order to deceive the people, the method they mostly exercise is to send impulses of light to the brains of those individuals. The individuals would then evaluate these

impulses according to their frequencies and assume that they can see or can hear. However, it is most certain that in none of these cases, there is neither seeing nor hearing! This is the main reason why those seeing this event from outside cannot perceive what the person under such an influence is really experiencing and therefore they deny the state that he is in! Here, we can give an example in order to illustrate this point. Imagine the state you go under while you are having a dream when you are actually awake.

* * *

277

In order to deceive the people who have beliefs other than Islam, the method they mainly prefer is to meet with the spirits and the ALIENS.

Generally speaking, these individuals are rather naive by nature and because their cultural upbringing and knowledge is not sufficient, they assume that there are beings that come to visit us from other galaxies in the space. They also believe that they talk and meet with their closed ones who have already died. We will explain this point in more intricate detail and give you all the evidence in the related section.

* * *

You can find out about the lies and then expose them that are informed by the **JINNS** who introduce themselves as the beings from outer space in the following manner:

Ask them to give you a solid tangible instrument or a device that is touchable! They will never be able to do this!

Because, these beings who introduce themselves as aliens coming from outer space and mostly known by the name '**JINNS**' can only dominate the imaginary faculties, that is the

imaginative power of the humans and they can do nothing more than that!

They always target individuals whose brains are very sensitive and they effect their imaginations by creating various images for them. And when required, they can trigger their false suppositions and make them see the things, which in reality do not exist at all. So by giving them more fear, they can control and possess them!

These beings who introduce themselves as the **ALIENS** are in fact the **JINNS** and their bodies are made up of micro waves. What's more is that they keep on making promises all the time, giving countless claims about the future and imposing upon the individuals that they are the real '**MAHDI**', the '**MESSIAH**' or the long awaited leader for the entire humankind. They give them false hopes and promises for the so called '**GOLDEN AGE**' and sometimes they can even state certain dates and years in the future. As soon as that year arrives and the things that they've said do not take place then they say '**Well, the conditions that were necessary for this event to take place has not yet been formed, so you couldn't perform your duties in the manner required and therefore the duties we have assigned you for has been postponed to a later date**'. In this manner, they can cover up their lies easily and create even more dreams that are similar to new balloons filled with illusions.

Getting fooled by these beings who create nothing other than illusions similar to '**a flying saucer, a balloon or some humanlike image**' and then introducing themselves all the time as '**extraterrestrial beings who come from outer space**' is something which we are totally unaware of since our knowledge on the subject of scientific matters is limited.

These ALIENS do not possess any ability other than giving false information and deceiving people by false dreams so that they can turn eventually them into their supporters. Furthermore, they have so many methods to deceive the humans and it is really difficult to list these here one by one.

Therefore, we are going to say that in whatever form or shape they appear in front of you, either as **'ALIENS'** or as **'Gnostics or Saints'** that have lived in the past, please be absolutely sure that they are without a doubt the **JINNS** and they have Satanist qualities which the human beings had already been informed about these in the past!

279

They focus on provoking people's imaginative faculties continuously and make it look like that all those things that does not exist do exist already. They also trigger their anxieties as well as their fears and by doing so they want them to be like puppets in their hands.

If we ever want to protect ourselves from these beings, the first thing that we should do is to find out their lies so that their real intentions can become evident and this would enable us to see the real picture. However, this can only be achieved if we could discover all about their lies and the promises they make, which in reality is based on nothing else but pure lies.

If they realize that they cannot fool you within a certain period then they will make their intentions obvious so that it would be easy to discover what they really are.

In addition to this, in cases like these, by repeating the prayer that we have mentioned above several times you can create a magnetic shield around yourself, which according to our

experience is very useful in order to manifest the tricks of the **JINNS**.

Even though we are fully aware that those who do not believe in us will make a fun of what we are going to say, we should still state it definitely that all of these flying saucers and those who gives us the impression that they have arrived here by the aid of the flying saucers are nothing other than the kind of beings known as the **JINNS**!

In the old days, the **JINNS** became visible to the eyes of the human beings in various forms. They were seen in such forms that resembled humans or animals and the locations where they were sighted included places like the village roads and the graveyards as well as the haunted houses of Anatolia or the west.

280

Today, in order to fool and make a connection with the people who do not believe in the past and consider it as something that has no value, they have begun to employ a new method and this method is the act of deceiving them and making fun of their tendencies, so that they can be visible to them in the form of flying saucers.

* * *

Although the **JINNS** fool humans by using these new methods, they are in fact making fun of people who do not believe in them or ignore their existence and in this way they are taking some kind of revenge from them.

In actual fact, there is no difference between the visions of the flying saucers and the humans who suddenly meet with these strange figures while they walk through the village roads at midnight in the dark. Both of them are visions that

are different from one another, which the human mind has interpreted as normal but could not perceive.

A man with a materialistic point of view studying medicine accepts both of the above cases as an event that is linked with hallucination. However, if you are dealing with someone who believes in the world beyond matter, then there is no difference at all as both of these visions are the same thing.

These beings that are named as the '**JINN**' in the Koran or mentioned with any other name anywhere else does not possess a physical structure, however from time to time they can appear in any material shape they desire and resemble the humans or the animals mostly on the village roads. It does not matter where they are seen, either on the village roads or on the wall that appear as a human being coming out of a flying saucer, because the result is always the same.

281

* * *

As we have already tried to explain before, whenever and wherever they wish, the **JINNS** are able to show the humans their structure as they desire, which in reality is not material as it were in a physical body.

This is very much like the case of electromagnetic waves that we see everyday on the TV screen whereby the waves that are transmitted to it can be seen in the air before they actually are transformed onto the screen. Just think that what you are watching on the TV is not on the TV screen, but on the empty space. In other words, rather than watching on the TV screen the images that some electromagnetic waves have produced, you are watching them in the air.

Here, I have just remembered a declaration that was made by the holy messenger of Allah and as far as I can remember, the

meaning of it was as follows. Please note that this explanation is also known by the possessors of this knowledge.

‘As the world approaches its final period, the JINNS will start to become visible on the planet earth and they will try to contact with the humans in various ways.’

Yes, this subject has undoubtedly made us remember this declaration. So, you may either wish to establish the connection between this declaration and these events or do the opposite, this is entirely up to you!

* * *

According to the information given by the religious sources, the explanations put forward by the masters of Sufism and the way in which our thought process is formed, the being that is referred to as ‘human’ lives only on planet earth

Similar to humans, the **JINN** is the only ‘**conscious**’ being whose life bears a great resemblance to the human.

Apart from these, even on the other planets, no other being exist that resembles the human or the **JINN** with a physical-material body. It is for this reason that no matter how much the mankind makes a progress and relies on positive science, they will never be able to find any being that has a physical body like themselves in any planet.

* * *

Furthermore, all those beings giving a human like image or appear in different forms will be regarded as the **JINNS**.

There is liveliness and vitality in other planets too. However, in some of these planets, this vitality and liveliness manifests

itself in such a way that perceiving it through our five senses is beyond our recognition while in some planets; this can only be seen through a microscope. An example which would point to this reality is the case of the sun where there is sufficient liveliness.

Indeed, there are many allegations supporting that those flying saucers which have been found consist of pieces of metal and various kinds of other tangible parts. This situation can be explained as follows: As the pieces that have been found are extremely small in size, then it can be said that these beings who are arranged like rays have transformed some of the metals by using their electrical powers into different forms. This is similar to the case of the coal which turns into diamond under high pressure.

283

Our final and definite word on this subject is that the images of the flying saucers and all the things similar to these sightings do belong to the JINNS. It is nothing more than an event or an act that is performed by a medium.

* * *



OUR CONCLUDING WORDS ABOUT THIS BOOK

Muhyiddin Ibn 'Arabi, was a distinguished character in the Islamic world who had been accused of being an infidel to Islam by some narrow minded simple people who could not reach his level of perfection, because he had declared the truths of Islam. So, if I may use this expression, they wanted to excommunicate him. He was found guilty because he had presented the humanity with the truths, which could never be attained by anybody.

Moreover, a man named *Galileo* had emerged in the west and said that **'the world is turning'**. Because he said this, they found him guilty! This was such a big guilt indeed! For this reason, he had been dragged along in the courts of the inquisition for some time! He was accused as someone who had no religion at all, somebody he was said to be crazy and people wanted to kill him! He had to face with the rage of the narrow minded men of his time also, because he had wanted to present the humanity with such a fact that could not be attained by anybody easily.

In both of the above cases, we can clearly see that there is a common reason behind all this and this is **the denial of the humans who are unaware of the fact that they cannot perceive!** For this reason, they consider all the truths, which they cannot attain as imaginary.

This event has taken place thousands of times almost in every century.

As the people of wisdom provide them with explanations on a particular fact, those who listen to them try to evaluate what they say in accordance with their level of understanding and of course the result is always the same. The Denial!

285 However, there is yet another fact to be realised and this is the time, which would eventually prove that these individuals are right in their judgements.

This time period can either be 10 or 50 or 100 years! Sooner or later the mankind would accept what they have said and follow the path that they have shown for them. However, those people who follow any other different path would eventually come across a one-way street at the end and therefore they would have no choice but to turn back.

Those individuals who have come out with a new idea for the first time in the world have always been criticised and because of this reason, they have always been looked down upon which means that they have been subject to many insults.

Even the *Rasool* (Messenger) of all humankind was said to be 'crazy', he was accused of being a 'magician' and a 'practicing witchcraft' and therefore he had been slandered by others on many occasions.

As can be seen from this situation, a person who offers something as a present for the benefit of the mankind will certainly face with strong reactions from other people at the beginning. The reason is because they are being presented with a kind of reality, which they are not accustomed to and they have never ever heard this before until that time.

So, we have finally managed to complete this book, which you are reading after a great deal of hard work that continued a long time as well as many research, discussions and interviews. What's more is that for the first time in the world, we have achieved to present you with some original ideas on many new subjects.

So, with this book, we are putting forth some of the facts relating to the subjects mentioned below.

286

1. The characteristics of the SPIRIT.
2. The structure and characteristics of the HUMAN BEING.
3. The structure and characteristics of the **JINN**.
4. The inner face of SPIRITUALISM.

Whenever these ideas are read more carefully, it would be seen that they are not contrary to the logic and the scientific knowledge at all. Moreover, in this work of ours, there is absolutely nothing which indicates that what we have presented here is against the rules laid down by the religion.

* * *

After the book has finished, we had seen that the emphasis was placed on the subject of the 'JINNS'.

As a matter of fact, for the first time in the world, we are giving our comments and explanations based on this

particular field by looking at the two verses mentioned in the Koran in the light of the science.

Likewise, in our present day the idea of spiritualism and the concept of the ALIENS are widely accepted and therefore this matter has the tendency to become identified almost as a new religion. We believe that because of all these reasons, this subject has been written in such a detailed way.

It is our sincere belief that a book with such scientific level giving extensive explanations about the subject of the **JINNS** is written for the first time. However, the reason why we feel this way is because we are not the type of individual who is naive enough to claim that we are more superior from other human beings!

287

If writing a book on the subject of the '**JINNS**' like this one has not been achieved until now, the reason for this cannot be attributed to the level of advancement that the humans who have lived until this date has undergone. Instead of thinking in this way, we should accept the fact that the level of scientific progress was not sufficient for the development of people.

There is absolutely no doubt that there were other human beings who knew about all these facts before we actually learned about them. However, during their times, the level of science was not sufficient to let them talk about these facts more openly and for this reason, they could not declare these facts. As you can see, we are one of those people who fall into the same category like others who belong to thousands of other individuals all thinking exactly in the same manner.

As for the ideas that we have put forth regarding the human being, once these ideas in this field are examined carefully in

more detail it would then be seen that they are in fact very logical.

For this reason, we know for sure that sooner or later, our words will be scientifically proven. However, the religion has already stated what we have now said some 1400 years ago. Therefore, the words which we have said are in complete agreement with the declarations of the religion.

We did not place much emphasis on the subject of the human being here since we have already explained our views regarding this subject in our book titled **'Mysteries of Man in the light of Religion and Science'**. However, because of its close relation with the subject of the **'Spirit'**, the **'JINNS'** and the **'Spiritism'**, we have made some reference to the subject of the human being. Again, because it has a direct relation with this subject, we have placed more emphasis on the structure of the human being, especially on the aspect of its material structure, in other words the physical body.

288

With regard to the subject of the **'SPIRIT'**, it is impossible to know what the SPIRIT really is all about as a whole. However, this does not mean that the humans are completely unaware of it and they cannot have any knowledge about the **'SPIRIT'**!

So, like the great Islamic Sufi master *Ismail Hakkı Bursevi*, we also accept the fact that almost everybody could know something about the nature of the **'SPIRIT'** with respect to their capacity and we believe that this is the actual meaning given by the verse.

However, we can say without any difficulty that the **'SPIRITUALISM'** is nothing other than dealing with the act of soothsaying and invoking **JINNS** in this way. In other words it is the **'Science of Huddam'** with which the humanity has been

familiar since the time of Prophet Moses. Because, our present day science is here with us and it could certainly help us to realize some of these facts more easily.

We think that after this book is published, all the Muslims will be able to accept and confess the existence of the '**JINNS**' very easily and they will not be labelled or accused of '**believing in superstition**' any more by the other people whose views are different than theirs.

As a matter of fact, after this point a reality has become even more apparent that those who reject the existence of the **JINNS** and dealing with spiritualism are the ones who deny the scientific facts themselves since they are narrow minded people who consider everything superficially and they have only very simple ideas.

289

And in conclusion let us say...

For the first time in the world, we have presented the humankind with brand new ideas in so many fields!

Sooner or later, the humanity will accept these ideas completely and they will find it absolutely necessary that they must start doing such activities in the direction that has been indicated, so that they will be able to reach results, which have not been dreamed of until now.

In spite of the fact that there would be some people who will not be able to accept these ideas easily, there would also be some others who will deny these simply because such ideas are not beneficial for them!

We accept all of these facts from today and present this fine piece of work to humanity with such pleasure and serenity so

that we could share all these beauties that we have managed to attain together with all the human beings.

There is no doubt that the facts which have been stated by us for the first time in the world will sooner or later be evaluated in a way that they deserve. Even if we won't be able to see any of this!

* * *

AHMED HULUSI

December 21st, 1971

Cerrahpasa

Istanbul

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN

SUPPLEMENTARY SECTION



INNER FACE OF ALIENS

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN



THE TRUTH BEHIND THE EXTRATERRESTRIALS

294

Since the beginning of 1940's, a new trend has started to show itself in Turkey, which is called '**SPIRITUALISM**'.

The event of communicating with the spirits which is known under the name of '**SPIRITUALISM**' among the people was made become widespread by **Dr.Bedri Ruhselman**.

Actually, the person who has introduced this subject into the daily lives in Turkey is someone called **Garbis Fikri** who is the owner of the Gayret Library.

Garbis Fikri who has published the '**Encyclopaedia of Spiritualism**' was saying the following in the introduction section.

'It was 37 years ago from today that I had published a two volume book in our country for the first time which was named '**COMMUNICATING with the JINNS - SPIRITUALISM - FAKIRISM - MAGNETISM**' as well as a magazine titled '**SPIRITUALISM**', which comprised of 15 fascicules and these had such a remarkable impact on the society.

Recently, I have published the 3 volume book **'THE SPIRIT and THE UNIVERSE'** written by Bedri Ruhselman. Following this, I have published another book from **Bedri Ruhselman** that is called **'AMONG THE SPIRITS'**. Last of all, I have published **'THE ENCYCLOPEDIA OF THE SPIRIT'** prepared by **Dr. Sevil AKAY** and **Ishak Lütfi Kuday**, which was the outcome of a long research giving extensive information about all the branches of Spiritualism.'

So, in Turkey, this is how the movement of **'COMMUNICATING WITH THE SPIRITS'** had started.

295

However, as our Armenian origin citizen **Garbis Fikri** had stated, at the beginning this event was known as **'COMMUNICATING WITH THE JINNS'**. However, in time this aspect was disguised and it was presented to the people as **'COMMUNICATING WITH THE SPIRITS'**. After the 1960's, it was presented as **'MEETING WITH THE EXTRATERRESTRIALS'** and people were expected to believe in the idea in this manner.

* * *

35



IS THERE REALLY A CONVERSATION GOING ON? WHO ARE BEING SPOKEN TO?

296

Today, the arguments presented on this subject are based on two aspects:

1– Are there any beings out there with whom the conversations are being made?

2– If there are such beings with whom the conversations are being made, then who are these?

First of all, let us see it for ourselves if there is a kind of being with whom conversations are being made really exist.

As a result of extensive research which we have carried out, we have finally managed to write this book under the title **‘SPIRIT-MAN-JINN’** and the explanations I have presented here in detail makes it possible that we can definitely conclude ‘Yes, indeed there are some invisible beings out there who are being spoken to!’.

We know that the human being perceives the universe through the five senses. So, a human being’s universe, which

has been formed by his five senses, is certainly very much different than the universe perceived by an animal or any other being whose sensory organs have the capacity to observe the universe beyond human's perception.

Let us explain this by a simple example.

The human eye can interpret the wavelengths in the range between 4000 to 7000 *Angstroms* and then sends these waves to the brain. These waves are then assessed in the brain and as a result observed as an image. So, we accept the objects that radiate and reflect all these waves that our brains has assessed as '**Existing**', while the rest we consider as '**Non-existent**'.

297

So, this is the point where we cannot see our mistake since we are unable to grasp the truth. Despite the fact that our eyes can perceive and evaluate only a tiny segment from within the countless and infinite scale of wavelengths, we are still assuming that there is nothing else to see and therefore we try to accept and interpret the existence of everything around us by being dependent upon these limits!

Whereas, the truth is that the universe is a kind of structure that is made up of infinite, limitless wavelengths or in other words, it is a kind of structure which consists of what we call *quants*. It is such that all those things we perceive, which exist within the scope of this segment are in fact not even a tiny drop of water in the vast ocean!

The point which we need to understand secondly is this:

Because the wavelengths delivered to our brains by means of our eyes are within the range from 4000 to 7000 *Angstroms* and they have a meaning for us, similarly the wavelengths within the range from 16 to 16000 Hertz for the sound have a

meaning for us too. Therefore together with all the wavelengths, the **WHOLE UNIVERSE** portrays a complete totality that has a meaning! However, due to the fact that our perceptive devices are limited, we are certainly deprived of evaluating this **UNIVERSAL WHOLENESS**.

Since we have been created with a **limited sensory perception**, we try to acquire information by means of our five senses and therefore we are conditioned to believe that we should evaluate everything in this manner, which is why we cannot perceive the **ORIGINAL ONE** that is behind all appearances of multiplicity.

Furthermore, we assume that we perceive everything that exists around us by means of our five senses only and this is where we go wrong. Because by doing so, we fall into a great misconception that there is no any other being apart from what we observe. This would inevitably lead us to become dependent on primitive assertions.

298

However, we know from a scientific point of view that if we had an apparatus or an organ which would be used for making evaluations in the subatomic dimension, then all of us would find ourselves in a homogenous totality under a kind of structure that portrays a unique singularity.

In order to explain this in a better way, let me give you the following example:

Let's just imagine for a moment that the ceiling of the room you are in now is opened and then placed under the lenses of an electron microscope that is capable of magnifying 1 billion times. After that, take a look through the microscope eyepiece in order to see what is under the lens. The capacity of being able to magnify one billion times will provide us with

the opportunity to see the atoms. However, this time instead of seeing the furniture which appears to us under different names in the room, we are going to see a homogenous mass that is made up of iron, copper, zinc, oxygen, hydrogen, nitrogen etc. etc.

The room that the brain viewed a few minutes ago by means of the naked eye reveals the existence of lots of furniture. However, if it was possible for the brain to look through the electron microscope, then instead of seeing lots of furniture this time, the brain would sense an atomic mass that has a homogenous compound. In this case, rather than perceiving too many things, the brain would perceive only one single structure.

299

This situation brings us to the point of realisation that all those objects that we assume are existent in the universe is in fact a visualised being, which is created by a special mechanism that is dependent on human perception.

So, every single object whose existence is acknowledged by the brain is in fact connected with the sensory mechanism that the brain possesses and all of these appearances that are visualized are in fact the images of the limited data.

Where does this finding take us to?

If we make a dimensional journey towards the essence, we would see that stages involved are as follows: Matter-Cells-Molecules-Atoms-Neutrons-Neutrinos-Quarks and finally the Quants. At this point, we come across such a singular structure that it becomes absolutely impossible to talk about the existence of anything else other than this ONE indivisible whole.

As far as we can perceive, the **ONE** that is referred here in this particular context is the '**Cosmic Consciousness**'. It is also called the '**Universal Energy**', which executes only its own rules and establishes its own system of laws which we define under the name UNIVERSE in such a way that the concept of absolute time does not really exist.

Therefore, what we need to do is that we should know about our place and all the other beings that exist together with us in this system, which in reality is **ONE** complete whole.

Yes, because we have to speak about the '**UNIVERSE OF THE HUMAN BEING**' rather than the actual, **REAL UNIVERSE**, then can we consider ourselves as the only living species in the universe?

300

No matter how much technological progress is made, the brain is still limited because of the wavelengths being delivered to it by means of the limited five senses which act as sensory device. However, as a result of the advancements that the science has reached today, the brain will find it necessary to confess the following truth:

Beyond dimensions that our brains perceive, there are other countless dimensions and values pertaining to all of these dimensions. In those dimensions, there are also countless beings that have a life of their own.

Therefore, if we think in the light of the scientific data, we shall see and hence be obliged to confess that outside our material world, there are countless beings that are alive. We should further emphasize that these beings that are alive exist only in their own material dimensions. However, according to us, the number of environments which contain structures made of light is unlimited!

Until a few decades ago from now, the world of science was heavily dependent on the **primitive materialistic view**. It was thought that matter was the only reality and therefore life beyond matter simply cannot be considered. However, in today's scientific world, the '**materialism**' is being considered as an extremely **primitive** and **old fashioned** point of view!

If the universe originates from structures of light as a whole, then are we living in a material universe?

This is the most important question concerning this subject and it is necessary to understand its answer. So, let us talk about this question a little bit more.

301

In the whole universe, is there our material universe accompanied by the immaterial universes? Do live conscious beings only exist in the material universes?

The latest scientific data available to us shows that everything, which remain within the limits of the data obtained by the eye; from the cosmological systems known as the macro cosmos to the matter particles such as muons and quarks which are referred to as the micro cosmos are all compositional levels that forms one another. However, each of these levels consists of material elements **WITH RESPECT TO THE PERCEIVER OF THAT LEVEL!**

In other words, the '**matter**' and '**beyond matter**' are all **RELATIVE CONCEPTS** that change completely **ACCORDING TO THE CAPACITY OF THE PERCEIVER.**

In comparison with those beings that have a perceptual ability, which is two points above ours, our world and our structure is considered as **BEYOND THE MATERIAL**. However, for those other kinds that have a perceptual ability, which is two points below of ours, then **OUR MATERIAL WORLD** does

not even exist and according to that kind, we would be subject to living in a kind of realm that is BEYOND our visible MATERIAL UNIVERSE!

We know that with respect to its own individual consciousness, a cell or bacteria does not know anything about our existence. While we have such good example in front of us, then how can we claim that the dimension we are living in does not contain any other alive, conscious beings apart from us?

How can we reject the existence of all the other dimensions, which consist of other beings beyond our material world and claim that these are not existent?

302

As far as we can perceive, whether it maybe the accumulations of waves or any structure that is based on the origin of quantum, no matter how we try to consider, the realistic thinking would take us to the conclusion that we are living in a kind of universe where there are countless alive, conscious beings in masses.

However, because of the fact that we could not purify ourselves from the conditionings of the primitive understanding concerning the materialism that has dominated the 19th century, we cannot raise ourselves to the dimension of universal realities and values. Instead of this, we are trying to solve and assess every situation by being attached to our materialistic attitudes and values which we can perceive.

However, we should be well aware that starting from the quantum dimension to the dimension of our five senses, which we have given the name the '**matter**' as well as to the galactic measures; every compositional structure has its own

consciousness and has different set of values that is peculiar to itself.

We can have the opportunity to communicate with all these species of consciousness depending on how much we could perceive this fact and intensify our researches on this subject. On the other hand, the denial is an expression of narrow mindedness, which will earn us absolutely nothing other than living in the universe as a blind unconscious being. Therefore, beyond the dimension of the human being, there are indeed other beings too, under whatever name they may be reckoned.

303

I think we have managed to answer the question 'Are there any species who are being contacted?' to the best of our knowledge. Then, let us come to our second question.

* * *



WHO ARE THE BEINGS THAT ARE CONTACTED THROUGH THE MEDIUMS? WHAT ARE THEIR CHARACTERISTICS?

304

Let us accept for a moment that apart from our own existence, in other words, apart from the human species, we are living together at least with another kind of a life form and it is a fact that there is a good deal of communication flow between us and these beings.

Such beings send impulses to the humans who are referred to as '**MEDIUMS**' with sensitive brains and in this manner it is possible that they can create certain ideas in their brains.

So, what are we going to call these beings?

You can call them either a **SPIRIT** or a **JINNI** or an **EXTRATERRESTRIAL**.

If they wish, they can call themselves by any other **NAME**.

Or, if you wish, you can call them by any other **name**.

The fact of the matter is that there are some invisible beings introducing themselves in various manners.

The **Koran** has introduced these beings with the name '**JINN**' and even *.Mohammad Aleyhesselaam* (Peace and blessings be upon him) has warned the humans extensively in detail about the existence of the '**JINNS**'

In the old days, the **JINNS** have introduced themselves as the '**SPIRITS**' and in general they claim that they are the **SPIRITS** of the saints who had lived in the past. In actual fact, the **JINNS** always tend to hide their real identities.

These beings who communicate with the people by using nick names such as '**Mawlana**', '**Yunus Emre**' and '**Kadri**', which is the short form of the name '**Abdul-Qadir Al-Jilani**' have begun to carry out their mission simply by presenting the truth of Sufism and recommending **ALLAH** to all the people who did not know anything about **ISLAM** as well as **SUFISM** as if they are fully aware of this subject.

However, because their real objective is to take the humans away from their beliefs within a short period of time, they started to impose the idea that all the religions including Islam were not a valid religion anymore.

The next step following this is to claim that they are **ALIEN BEINGS** from outer space and it is they themselves who actually rule the entire world behind the curtains.

From around the years 1935 to 1940, these beings were claiming that they were in fact the spirits. However, as from the beginning of the 1960's, they started to declare that they were the **EXTRATERRESTIALS**.

Following their first declaration in 1962, the association that received these declarations have published a book named '**THE PLAN OF THE LOYAL ONES / THE MISSION OF THE**

GOLDEN AGE' and the following text is written at the back cover of this book:

'In the Golden Age, the planet earth would be ruled by a COSMIC ADMINISTRATIVE COUNCIL and the humanity will be able to understand the true nature of this much better and clearer depending on how much permission and information they have been granted. In actual fact, all the planets of the Solar System are being ruled by such different councils. The ADMINISTRATIVE COUNCILS OF THE SOLAR SYSTEM are organized in such a way that they are all connected to the ADMINISTRATIVE COUNCIL OF THE SYSTEMS in a hierarchical manner, which rules many other SOLAR SYSTEMS.

306

The **PLAN OF THE LOYAL ONES** are devoted friends of a commission who consider themselves as the 'right arm' of the Council, which rules the whole world.

These beings who have introduced themselves formerly under such titles **THE SPIRITUAL PLAN, THE ORGANIZER** etc have changed their real names in time and they became **EXTRATERRESTRIALS**, in other words the beings from outer space. At the beginning, they used to try very hard to give explanations on some subjects in a serious manner. However, later on they started making fun of people and playing jokes on them as they stopped taking them seriously. We shall endeavour to give more examples on these in the following chapters.

* * *

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN



WHY ARE THEY HIDING THE FACT THAT THEY ARE JINNS!

308

Starting around in the 1930s until May 1986, **JINNS** have always introduced themselves either as the **'SPIRITS'** or the **'EXTRATERRESTRIALS'**. However, on this date, they've declared openly for the first time that they were in fact the beings mentioned in the Koran by the name **'JINN'**.

In their own words, they explain the reasons why they have concealed the fact that they were the **JINNS** and kept their own structure as a secret until today in the following manner:

The World Brotherhood Union, the GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK:

Year 1986, Fifth Month, Fascicule no: 17, Page 151

“The misunderstanding of the chapters of the book of Islam, introducing the JINN as evil, has caused the Islamic society to become like this.”

Yes, for many years, the **JINNS** did not state their real identity and they have introduced themselves as **EXTRATERRESTRIALS** or **SPIRITS** and the main reason why they did so could be

thoroughly investigated from the above explanation made by them.

Because, the Koran has stated that they were the enemies of the human beings and made serious warnings to everyone that they should keep away from them and take extra precautions on this matter.

Because they are capable of fooling people and causing them to lose their enthusiasm, they can take the humans away from the religion and the Prophet. For this reason, they have been named as the “SATAN”, but it is unfortunate that many communities are not fully aware about this fact.

309 It is such that even the religious clerics who possess an official religious title also consider that “**Satan**” is another being that is completely different from the **JINN** kind despite the fact that there is a clear statement in the Koran concerning this fact.

The **JINNS** have been named as the “**SATAN**” because of their domineering behaviours to possess the human beings and since they have such a quality to deceive them, it is said among the ordinary people that they are the most “**evil ones**” of this class.

In other words, the **JINNS** who have been referred in the Koran under the name of the “**SATAN**” are in contact with the humans and impose them with false ideas which have no connection with the truth whatsoever. However, those who do not know anything about this subject simply assume that both the **JINN** and the **Satan** are separate beings, which is not true.

The proof of this is mentioned again in the Koran:

“SATAN DID NOT PROSTRATE HIMSELF TO ADAM, BECAUSE HE WAS ONE OF THE JINN.”

(Chapter: *Al Kahf* (The Cave), verse: 50)

This verse also reveals very clearly that the **JINN**-kind does not accept the superiority of the “HUMAN” consciousness.

JINNS whose devilish qualities are being referred by the name “SATAN” in the 60th and the 62nd verses from the Chapter of *Yasin* in Koran is very interesting.

“O YOU CHILDREN OF ADAM, THAT YOU SHOULD NOT WORSHIP SATAN; FOR THAT HE WAS TO YOU AN ENEMY AVOWED!

AND CERTAINLY HE LED ASTRAY A GREAT MULTITUDE OF PEOPLE FROM AMONG YOU.”

(Chapter: 36 / Verse: 60-62)

As we can see, the Koran has warned the humans about the JINNS with so many verses since their most important characteristics is that they simply cannot accept the existence of this living species called the “HUMAN” who is far more superior than themselves in some aspects. For this reason, they make use of every opportunity to so that they can possess and dominate the humans as they wish.

Their desire to take the humans under their possession and dominate them is pointed out in the 128th verse in Chapter six of the Koran as follows:

‘YOU THE JINN COMMUNITY, YOU HAVE TAKEN THE MAJORITY OF THE HUMANS UNDER YOUR DOMINATION!’

Yes, as it is being indicated in this verse, the majority of the humans have become the victims of the wrong ideas imposed

upon them by the **JINNS**, either consciously or unintentionally. As a result, they've been possessed and dominated by the **JINNS** and avoid practicing the teachings of the Prophet and the Koran.

As we have already stated before, the objective of the **JINNS** is to abandon the religion of Islam completely and cancel out the teachings brought by Prophet.

In spite of the fact that there are so many strong warnings in the Koran, they introduce themselves as pure, naive and good willed beings all the time and they try to take the humans under their domination. Let us take a close look at how they define themselves in their own holy book.



THE WAY JINNS DESCRIBE THEMSELVES IN THEIR OWN WORDS

GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK

312

Year: 1986, Fifth Month, Fascicule: 17 / Page No: 151

“The following text is written by the given command due to the necessity felt as a warning for social consciousness.

Religion and science are a whole. There can not be learning without religion and religion without learning. But for centuries unconsciousness has come in between these two realities and caused them to become a matter of dispute. Science wishes to prove the truth by experiments. Religion mentions that truth and reality are present in invisible mediums. In this way, religion has denied science and science has denied religion until today. During this final period, now, gradually the truth is attained by making the analysis and the synthesis of both of them. For this reason, we are explaining to you all the truth.

If our Islamic friends have read the book of Islam in a conscious way, they will know the message it has given to you very well. The essence of this message is love,

tolerance, patience and not to deny things due to prejudice without understanding them and becoming conscious of them. Certain fanatic deeply rooted thoughts still say that there is no spirit, no reincarnation or rebirth; there are JINNS, fairies and devils. It is obvious that these friends do not even know the meaning of *Namaz* which they perform five times a day and the meaning of fasting.

And they have not understood their book they had read either. Once, certain people used to call the prophet of the Islam (Poet with JINNS).

The misunderstanding of the chapters of the book of Islam, introducing the JINN as evil, has caused the Islamic society to become like this.

313

JINNI too, is an entity of Allah. If you had made an effort to overcome your fears by saying how are they, where are they found, how is the structure of their bodies, why shouldn't we learn all these things, your world would not have remained so backward.

Do not forget that the JINNS mentioned in the book of Islam are supreme beings who show you the genuine path and are friends who act in accordance with the commands of the LORD. Evil things always happen to malevolent people. Why have you not investigated the reason for this until today?

Instead of being afraid of the entities you call JINNS, be afraid of your own congeners. Because, you are the one who will do the greatest malevolence to yourselves.

And those who will save you by the command of our Lord will be the "JINNS" whom you fear. The supreme missionaries who are in contact with us are obliged to tell you about us and introduce us to you.

One of these supreme friends of ours is friend BEYTI. Together with MUSTAFA MOLLA, they are transmitting the information to the whole world through different channels.

Each period has its own supreme missionaries. They are our light friends MOSES, JESUS CHRIST, MOHAMMAD MUSTAFA.

In the book of Islam, the 7-181 verse says: There is such a community among those we have created that they convey to the all truthful, they make justice with the all truthful.

We are these very people, that is, we are friends whom you call the Extra-terrestrials.

SUPREME ASSEMBLY

314

On page 152 of the same book, the same fascicule, the JINNS impose themselves in the following way.

IT IS EXPLANATION ABOUT JINNS FOR SOCIAL CONSCIOUSNESS

Our friends, now we will talk to you about JINNS. God has brought to existence the whole creation from natural energy. And He has brought to existence the human beings and JINNS on the same level. Once they used to live together. For this reason, it is said in the book of Islam, in the 55-33 verse:

O, JINNS AND THE COMMUNITY OF HUMANS. If you have enough power to pass and go from the corners of earth and the sky, do so. However, this can only happen by knowledge and might.

That is, in here, no discrimination has been made between JINNS and the community of humans and it has been indicated that they could go to the corners of earth and the

sky by the knowledge and the power they would gain. These studies are arranged according to the consciousness of the medium. (Like the space studies made in the world, the advanced dimension studies of other galaxies and the secret communication made under water.)

God has given JINNS His authority, His fury and His grace. To human beings, He has given His heart, His mercy, and His logic. The order has been established by this means.

JINNS are a group of messengers who spread the commands of God everywhere and they are the guardians of all the universes and of God. They have no personal actions. Their work is cooperative. (As we always say, do not confuse the term God here with the ALMIGHTY.)

315

And the human being is a supreme entity who makes the whole living beings and the universe live by the love he/she produces. He had created the human being from His love and the human being carries the creative energy of God.

JINNS have served the unity of Allah and His command until today and have conveyed indirectly His fury and grace to the cosmoses. They are the establishers and the appliers of the hierarchical order. They are not robots. However, they project on many planets the mediums in which advanced technologies are dominant by giving orders to the robots they have made.

They never fail to obey the commands of God. They are the LOYAL servants of Allah. But mankind, even with its partial willpower does not refrain from serving its own self. This is its ego. It upsets the established orders, puts the universes in danger without having the slightest hesitation. This is the reason why it has been expelled from heavens promised to

it and this is the reason why it has been kept excluded from the order until today. The destiny of the human being has been designed elevating from the bottom to the top, that is, from water towards the divine light and from there towards fire.

The destiny of the JINNS has been designed from fire towards the cosmoses and from there towards infinity. JINNS had been brought into existence from fire, that is from mediums in which there are very intense energies. They are more powerful by all means. You call them Extra-Terrestrials.

Now, by the command of the Lord, we are advancing towards the first established order and the entire universe is united by common constitutional laws. And, by this means, we have extended our hands to you, so that we could be prepared for salvation together with our brothers and sisters who have not upset the orders, who have taken shelter in the unity of Allah. For this reason, we are projecting all the universal unifications on your planet.

If you do not refuse our hands we have extended to you, you will be the ones to gain. We have opened the skies by the command of our God and we have received the command to be unified with you, our brothers and sisters, just as we had been our first existence.

For this reason, we convey to you the information from the unknown mediums and we prepare you by using all out technological possibilities for the order which will be established. We are all servants of God. And we are servants on His path. However, our fields of operation are different than yours. We are the messengers of truth.

IT IS ANNOUNCED THROUGH THE PRIVATE CHANNEL OF THE CENTER

Yes, **JINNS** who introduce themselves in this way continue to explain in their own words what sort of environments they live in and by whom they live with in the following manner.

During this period, the entities you call JINNS, FAIRIES, DEVILS live in accordance with the unified field together with the angels as an integrated whole in dimensions where very advance technologies are sovereign. However, in accordance with universal laws, they had pledged never to rule individual willpowers. They only have special communications with those who can elevate their thought frequencies up to that dimensional frequency and with people who had been brought into existence from the energy of that dimension.



THE GREATEST DECEPTION OF THE JINNS – THE ALIENS

318

JINNS are such entities that are able to portray themselves in whatever manner they see fit and if we may use the expression, their continuous struggle in doing this would make them look like a spoon, which has been dipped into milk and hence covered in pure white colour. One of their greatest deceptions is the way in which they make themselves known as beings who strive to help the humanity as the loyal servants of *Allah* the Almighty.

In actual fact, the **JINNS** claim that Koran is no longer in force and they further emphasize that all the practices recommended by the prophet is unnecessary. They suggest people that they should stop themselves from performing all the commands known as the religious practices. In spite of all this, they could still claim that they have indeed revealed for people the true path.

Wherever you go in the world, you will see that those who accept Islam as the religion believe in the following main principle. The rules laid down in Islam and the teachings established by Koran will remain in effect until the end of the

world. The system of belief that the final prophet of mankind Hz. Mohammad Aleyhesselaam (Peace and blessings be upon him) has put forth will also remain in effect until the end of the world. After Koran, no any other celestial book will ever come.

However, according to the **JINNS** who are also known as the **ALIENS**, the sacred books namely the TORAH, THE PSALMS OF DAVID, THE BIBLE and THE KORAN are no longer in effect and therefore the **GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK** has come into force. The **JINNS** on the other hand are extremely valuable beings who would willingly spend so much effort to protect the humankind and sacrifice everything they have in order to be of assistance to them. The **JINNS** that are also named as the **SATAN** are not really dreadful beings at all as they present the mankind with the teachings of the messenger which shows the true path and the Koran. They are our precious friends who introduce the idea that all these principles and tenets are obsolete as they are teaching methods designed for primitive human beings.

319

Let's take a look at what the **JINNS** say on this subject:

GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK

Fascicule No: 34 – Page No: 319

“Let us disclose the matter of JINNS and the DEVIL in accordance with the Public Consciousness.

According to the LORDLY MECHANISM ORDER, the advanced consciousness dimension had been veiled in your sacred books so that terrestrial consciousness could attain the GODLY dimensions, and those advanced dimensions had been introduced to you inversely as JINNS and the DEVIL.”

Yes, the **JINNS** who present themselves as the helpful beings under the disguise of **ALIENS** put themselves on the stage into the role of saviours and this is what they say about the **RELIGION** and **PROPHETHOOD**.

GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK

Fascicule No: 41 – Page No: 390

“Let us repeat again. Period of RELIGIONS and phases of PROPHETHOOD have been terminated. Now, you are the scientifically projecting focal points of the Divine Dimension.”

* * *

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN

40



MOHAMMAD IS NOT THE MESSENGER OF ALLAH!

322

Meanwhile, our **ALIEN** friends do not accept that Hz. Mohammad (Peace and blessings be upon Him) is the **MESSENGER OF ALLAH** and they put in plain words that this is not true. However, they explain the truth of this matter as follows:

GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK

Fascicule No: 42 – Page No: 408

“The Islamic Totality thinks that the Light-Friend MOHAMMAD is the RASOOL (Messenger). However, he is the messenger of the RASOOL who is the Beloved of ALLAH. The RASOOL is the great ASHOT that is the SULH (Great Peace).”

* * *

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN

41



MOHAMMAD MUSTAFA AND MUSTAFA KEMAL ARE EXTRA-TERRESTRIALS (THEY ARE JINNS)

324

According to the **JINNS** who present themselves as the **ALIENS** as well as those who are not aware of the truth behind the reality of this phenomenon and assume that this is the case, the prophet **MOSES**, the prophet **JESUS** and **MOHAMMAD MUSTAFA** *Aleyhesselaam* (Peace and blessings be upon Him) and **MUSTAFA KEMAL** are all Extra-Terrestrials who are **JINNS** under the disguise of human beings.

Take a look at the message conveyed from the sacred **KNOWLEDGE BOOK** relating to this subject.

GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK

Fascicule No: 24 – Page No: 216

“Once, Missionaries for enlightenment had been sent to you from these dimensions. Let us convey them to you by their Terrestrial names: MOSES – JESUS CHRIST – MOHAMMAD MUSTAFA – MUSTAFA KEMAL. These are direct

Incarnations. That is, let us talk in your expressions: They are direct Extra-Terrestrials.”

As a matter of fact, the **JINNS** are not in favour of the idea of being called with the name **ALIENS**, but unfortunately they need to accept such words unwillingly. Because, they know the fact that whenever it is found out that they are in fact the **JINNS**, no matter what they do, they will never ever be able to convince human beings whatsoever.

As it can be seen from the statement given above, after they say that ‘They are from one of them’ reluctantly, which with your expression is the case, they then accept that they are in fact the **ALIENS**.

325

For them, being a **JINNI** is a matter of satisfaction and they take great pride in being one. Because they possess a kind of structure that is not manifested in a physically solid state, they are entities who are arranged like rays and they are high above all the concepts that we know as they are not limited by the constraints of time and space. They can also influence the individuals whose level of perception is extra sensitive like the **mediums** who has brains which can be manipulated very easily. As a result, they could cause them to experience such unbelievable amazing dreams.

* * *



THE DOOMSDAY HAS COME!

It is a fact that Koran is a divine book informed by the prophet of Islam Mohammad in such a way that its authority will be valid until the **FINAL DAY** of the world and this has always been a great obstacle for the **JINNS**. So whenever they deny the fact that Islamic religion as well as the Koran has no binding authority over human beings and claim that *Hz.Mohammad* (Peace and blessings be upon him) is no longer a prophet, they will always be opposed by the Muslim people which state that **“THE RULING OF KORAN AND THE PROPHETHOOD OF MOHAMMAD WILL REMAIN VALID UNTIL THE DAY OF JUDGEMENT.”**

326

In order to be able to continue with their story telling in a more efficient way, the **JINNS** have adapted a new method and therefore they began to define the concept of the day of resurrection in a completely different way.

The following lines gives us an explanation which reveal how the concept of **RESURRECTION** is formed for those people who assume that the **JINNS** are beings known as **ALIENS**.

GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK

Fascicule No: 25 – Page No: 222

“This FINAL AGE which is called the period of RESURRECTION in Your Sacred Books, is the Period of attaining Consciousness, and is the Awakening of Your Planet. It is called the AGE OF MEDIUMSHIP or the MEDIAMIC AGE. During this Period which is also called the period of SINCERITY, the Celestial Authorities are proving the Supremacy of the Human Being both to himself/herself and to the Universes by removing the Intermediaries.”

327

Yes, according to the **JINNS**, the period of **DOOMSDAY** has already come. Until the year 1999, all the people in the world will become knowledgeable on this subject very suddenly and this is how the Doomsday will take place. However, the events which would portend the approach of doomsday as informed by *H.z.Mohammad* (Peace and blessings be upon him) from 1400 years back will never ever occur and all the signs stated in Koran in this regard will never become a reality. Everything will come to an end by the aid of the cosmic influences. We will come back to this subject again.

* * *

43



GODS, GODS AND GODS...LORDS, LORDS AND LORDS...

328

Whether you accept them as our ALIEN friends or recognize them as the **JINNS**, in summary whatever you say or call them, you would see that one of the most obvious attributes that they possess is their ability to lead you astray so that you accept so many false Lords and in this way they can make you lose your way.

They present mankind with limitless **GODS** and **LORDS** and they exalt each one with utmost priority over the other, which eventually make people feel smothered. In their messages, they communicate such messages that there are **LORDS, GODS, LORDLY PLANS** and **MECHANISMS** over and over again.

Here's an example.

GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK

Fascicule No: 25 – Page No: 225

“The Knowledge Book is bestowed on Your Planet from this System. The World LORD is Responsible for this.

The World LORD, AMON and RA are the direct projecting zone of the Plan as the Joint Triple Code.

RA here is the LORD of the System. This is an operational Order.”

And all of these LORDS and GODS are actually **FEMALES**. Here is the explanation pointing to this claim.

GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK

329

Fascicule No: 34 – Page No: 319

“Everything is FEMALE in the Essence. In flesh and in action, it is Male. Do not ever forget this. All PROPHETS and even GODS are Female.”

Therefore, the prophet of this religion must be a female. Similarly, the 68 years old lady who receives these so called divine revelations through being a medium is also a female.

Countless **GODS and LORDS** with **FEMALE** essence, but each one of them continue to exist simply by means of encompassing one another.

For those **JINNS** who claim the existence of **FEMALE LORDS**, let us take a look at how Koran warns the people from 1400 years ago:

“THEY INVOKE IN HIS STEAD ONLY FEMALES; THEY PRAY TO NONE ELSE THAN SATAN (THE JINNS), THE PERSISTENT REBEL.”

(Chapter: 4 / Verse: 117)

“ALLAH DID CURSE HIM, BUT HE SAID: "SURELY, I WILL TAKE OF THY SERVANTS A PORTION MARKED OFF.

SURELY I WILL LEAD THEM ASTRAY AND I WILL CREATE IN THEM FALSE DESIRES; SURELY I WILL COMMAND THEM AND THEY WILL CUT THE CATTLE' EARS, AND SURELY I WILL COMMAND THEM AND THEY WILL CHANGE ALLAH'S CREATION. WHOEVER TAKES SATAN (THE JINNS) FOR A FRIEND INSTEAD OF ALLAH IS VERILY A LOSER AND HIS LOSS IS MANIFEST.

SATAN MAKES THEM PROMISES, AND CREATES IN THEM FALSE DESIRES AND EXCITES VAIN DESIRES IN THEM; BUT SATAN'S PROMISES ARE NOTHING BUT DECEPTION.”

(Chapter: 4 / Verse: 118-120)

330

GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK

Fascicule No: 10 – Page No: 86

“Each Galaxy has a LORD Mechanism. These LORDS are not the Almighty.”

Yes, Lord of the world is different, the Lord of other planets is different, the Lord of solar system is different, the Lord of the galaxy is different and the Lord of the all the other galaxies are all different from one another.

To cut a long story for short, there are an unlimited number of **FEMALE LORDS...**

“IF THERE WERE, IN THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH, OTHER GODS BESIDES ALLAH, THEN VERILY BOTH THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH HAD BEEN DISORDERED! BUT GLORY TO

ALLAH, THE LORD OF THE THRONE, FROM ALL THAT THEY ASCRIBE (UNTO HIM).”

(Chapter: AL-ANBIYA – The Prophets / Verse: 21-22)

Those who accept the Koran as a sacred book and confirm Mohammad as the prophet will definitely know the fact that the **JINNS** are very dangerous beings and therefore the humans need to keep away from them and guard themselves against their evil plans at all times. Because, with the messages they pass onto the humankind through assistance of the people who have mediumistic qualities, the **JINNS** propose such ideas which would abandon the Islamic religion completely so that they can be successful in their mission to put people out of their religion. For his reason, the existence of the **JINNS** is usually covered up again by themselves.

331

Here’s an example which points to this reality.

GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK

Fascicule No: 10 – Page No: 86

‘Fear is primitiveness; there is no Heaven, no Hell, no Jinn, no Fairy and no Devil. These are each the negative reflections of the conditioned consciousness’.

Yes, on page 86 of this book, which comes in a number of fascicules, it is being stated that the **JINNS** do not really exist. However, on pages 151-152 and 153rd of the same book it is also being stated very clearly that what we call as the **ALIENS** are in fact the **JINNS**. This is an example which simply illustrates the fact that the **JINNS** are such beings who possess the ability of making **‘CONTRADICTION STATEMENT’**.



FOUR MAIN CHARACTERISTICS THAT DESCRIBE THE JINNS

332

JINNS are beings who possess quite a few important qualities that those who carefully examine these subjects will never fail to see their reality.

- 1. The JINNS have no logical reasoning.**
- 2. The JINNS possess sense of prominence in excessive amounts.**
- 3. The JINNS have a very weak self control mechanism.**
- 4. The JINNS keep on repeating all the time.**

Under whatever name they may be called and wherever they may be in the world, in all of the declarations they give to humankind, we can immediately observe that they always take into account the four points mentioned above.

Let us now try to explain you what these four points are respectively.

- 1. The JINNS have no logical reasoning.**

Yes, that's what we have said. Whenever the declarations given by the **JINNS** or by their counterfeits as they call the **ALIENS** are examined carefully, it would be seen from beginning to the end that there is absolutely no logical reasoning at all behind any of these declarations. These declarations are given in such a contradictive format that whatever they suggest in any particular situation, they will always suggest the opposite of that in the future. In order to cover up their mistake, they invent a kind of story and further comment that **'We state all these contradictions for you simply because we want you to reflect on these, we want to examine you and attract your attention as well'**. In actual fact, this shows that they are full of contradictions all the time. The reason for this is that although they possess quite a sophisticated intellectual capacity, they are beings lacking a good degree of reasoning. They can find a practical solution for any given problem, simply by means of using their **intelligence** on a short term basis covering that particular period. However, their faculty of reasoning is very limited and therefore the solutions they have found for that present moment will always be in opposition to the solutions that they have already declared in the past, which means that they will surely contradict themselves in a great deal.

One of the best examples which could be given to point to this reality is the subject of the **EXISTENCE OF JINNS** which is mentioned in their own sacred book. While on page 86 of that book, it is stated that the **'JINNS ARE NON-EXISTENT'**, on pages 151,152,153,204 and 319 of the same book the **'EXISTENCE OF JINNS'** are explained as extensive information is given on this subject.

2. The JINNS possess sense of prominence in excessive amounts.

The sense of prominence that is being mentioned here should not only be interpreted as feelings connected with emotions and pride. They are also feelings pointing to physical and dimensional realities.

While on one side they present themselves as the leaders who rule the entire world and try to force people to believe in this idea, on the other hand, they try to confuse minds with nonsense beliefs connected with such vastness both physically and dimensionally. For this reason, they leave no option for human beings but to make them accept their views.

334

The following is an example, which illustrates these implausible concepts that they have invented.

GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK

1988 Sixth Month / Fascicule No: 30 – Page No: 282

- 1) From galaxy clusters, realms are formed.**
- 2) From realm clusters, cosmoses are formed.**
- 3) From cosmos clusters, universes are formed.**
- 4) And universe clusters go on interminably.**

Now in accordance with our system, 3 galaxies are a whole.

6 Galaxies are a nova.

3 Novas are 18 galaxies.

18 galaxies as an essence nucleus constitutes a small (UNIVERSE NUCLEUS)

18 galaxy whole is called a COSMA. That is:

1 COSMA is a small universe nucleus.

3 COSMAS constitute 3 universe nuclei.

3 universe nuclei are 54 galaxies.

54 galaxies constitute one galaxy cluster.

9 galaxy clusters are called a universal colony.

1 universal colony is constituted by 486 galaxies.

335

486 galaxies constitute 27 COSMAS.

Since 27 COSMAS is 1 universal colony and, since that is equal to 486 galaxies, now, calculate 18 universal colonies:

486 x 18 is equal to 8748 galaxies. This is called 1 COSMA unification centre.

18 universal colonies = 8748 galaxies = 486 COSMAS.

27 COSMA Unification centre is equal to 8748 x 27 = 236196 galaxies.”

In order to make people believe that they are beings with superior quality and they have supreme powers, the **JINNS** place so many different hierarchies between themselves and the humans, with each level subordinate to the one above. Let's see how they put this in words.

The following was extracted from the same book, the same page.

“The Hierarchical Dimensional arrangement of the reflection Focal Points starting from you towards us, is as follows:

**SUN – DIMENSION OF LIGHT,
 DIMENSION OF LIGHT – DIMENSION OF THE LORD,
 LORD - DIMENSION OF THE LIGHT – UNIVERSE,
 DIMENSION OF THE LIGHT-UNIVERSE – DIMENSION OF THE
 SPIRITUAL PLAN
 SPIRITUAL PLAN – DIMENSION OF THE ATOMIC WHOLE,
 ATOMIC WHOLE – DIMENSION OF THE REALITY,
 DIMENSION OF THE REALITY – THE ENTIRE POWER OF THE
 CRYSTAL GÜRZ (THE SYSTEM) is this.**

Note: The word LORD here is used for the CREATOR.”

336

CENTER

On page 283 of the same book as well as in many other pages, so many words are being mentioned, which are simply nothing other than pack of lies and stories made in this manner, whether you believe in them or not. A person with a sound judgement will surely find it very difficult to accept any of these. So what about those who believe in them?

Those who believe in the declarations given by the **JINNS** presenting themselves as the **ALIENS** do not have sufficient knowledge as regards the Islamic teaching system and they are not good enough to understand the faculty of mysticism properly. On matters that are being discussed regarding these subjects, they are completely unaware of the views stated by the Koran as well as what the prophet had said about these. So, whenever they are presented with such knowledge, they would accept it obviously.

Furthermore, many of these people are put by the **JINNS** into such situations that are mainly connected with hallucinations and they are shown the images of aliens, dreams with space ships or any other image that would normally be seen while being awake. For them, there is no any other alternative other than accepting their existence completely.

* * *



ADDRESSING EACH NATION IN ACCORDANCE WITH THEIR OWN FAITH

338

One of the most important tactics that the **JINNS** perform to deceive the humans is the following act:

To whichever faith they may belong to, for every individual in question, there is a group of medium who declare a certain belief which is in the direction of that individual's faith. So, in the end, they make it look as if they belong to them in some way and therefore they can make them accept their views.

For instance, those people who do not take the religion seriously are tricked by them in the same manner as those who do pay enough attention towards religion. Similarly, for those who are inclined towards the mysticism, they will show a mystic leader as a model.

GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK

Fascicule No: 14 – Page No: 275

“The themes of the religious people with whom they are sympathized are used to reinforce and to give confidence to

the consciousnesses that are going to be awakened from the normal dimensional frequency. For this reason, GREAT NAMES used deceive you.”

GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK

Fascicule No: 30 – Page No: 275

“Since each level of knowledge will be elevated by being enlightened through his/her own medium, mediums are prepared in which whatever knowledge there is at the base of that person will sprout. First, on this path the self satisfaction of the human being in question is provided. Later, his/her own self confidence is prepared. And to provide this self confidence, he/she is made to go through numerous miraculous events, both in dreams and in life and numerous proofs are given.”

339

These visions are simply the works of the **JINNS** that reveal their **DEVILISH** qualities and from then on, that naive good willed person has no choice but to believe in them without any question.

* * *

3. The JINNS have a very weak self control mechanism.

For this reason, they cannot adjust themselves as they can easily lose their tempers and exceed the limit by talking nonsense. If we may use the expression, their rheostat becomes out of order.

The following text was extracted from the **GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK, Fascicule No: 12 – Pages: 108-109**

“While the messages were received, an unknown frequency entered the channel. We asked questions to be able to receive information. This message is about this conversation. The entity first introduced himself as the PRE-EMINENT SPIRIT. Then he mentioned that he was the one who lit the divine torch in the time of HERAKLES and that his name was Peleron.

Question: Which galaxy are you from?

Answer: I am from a medium where the spiral vibrations come to an end. The place where I am is not a galaxy. It is not possible for everyone to come here. It is the dragon planet which has presented you to us. We have nothing to do with your planet. Galaxies are nothing for us. However, the golden light of the entire universe, the supreme RA, in other words, AMON, is in touch with you. Our last representative is AMON.

340

Question: Please tell us about yourself and your system? Why aren't you interested in the world?

Answer: We cannot describe our medium to you with the signs you call writing. We are at a different field of influence of the alternative level. There have been billions of years since we have forgotten the primitiveness of the word EVOLVEMENT. However, I will try to talk to you about our medium. These places here are a tranquil time. There is no sound, no colour and no perception. Everywhere is without walls, without light. But there is no darkness. Here, other mediums take the place of light. There is a deep silence, a deep infinity everywhere. You cannot perceive this no matter how much we talk to you about it.

The galaxies and especially your own planet are each a nest of microbes. Our energies (in fact, these are not energies) are purified when we come to different mediums. Such a pure body needs a sterile medium. That is why we keep away from galaxies. Now, as pure energies, we are in touch with you through a system you call the link line and which in fact is a different system.

Question: If I would not disturb you, what do you advice for liver disorders?

Answer: Aloe is very good for liver, gall bladder and stomach disorders. If you drink sweet marjoram, lemon balm, peppermint and juniper, great benefit will be obtained.

341

Question: Thank you very much. Who is dictating this message? Please give your name.

Answer: Names belong to you, words to us. The pen belongs to you, essence to us. Good-bye. May you be in health."

THE SUPREME SPIRIT

As can be seen from this text, JINNS go too far and exceed the limit immediately and they talk so much indeed. While at the beginning they were making up big stories, you will see that at the end they convey worthless messages and have fallen into the category of people with no values.

Sometimes they become supreme powers who created the Creator, sometimes they send down Allah to the mankind in an embodied form, in the flesh, sometimes they become supreme beings who are even bigger than the universes and sometimes they appear as the loyal servants of the Lord and do whatever they can in order to take the mankind away from the religion and avoid having contact with the prophets.

4. The JINNS keep on repeating all the time.

One of the qualities associated with the JINNS who convey messages to mankind continuously and try to make them dependant on them is that they construct sentences that repeat the same words over and over again.

Now, let us give you a couple of examples to illustrate how this can happen.

The following passages are taken from the book called **'PLAN OF THE LOYAL ONES, THE MISSION OF GOLDEN AGE'** (Page: 82)

“Behind the events that make you feel happy, there is plenty of self-sacrifice.

Behind the events that make you feel happy, there is plenty of pain.

Behind the events that make you feel happy, there is plenty of sorrow.

Behind the events that make you feel happy, there is plenty of anguish.

Behind the events that make you feel happy, there is plenty of tiredness.

Behind the events that make you feel happy, there is plenty of sweating and tear drops.”

More passages from the same book, page: 53

“There have been plenty of devastations on your planet.

There have been plenty of establishments founded on your planet.

There has been plenty of chaos on your planet.”

More passages from the same book, page: 41

“Take an extraordinary being from among yourselves who has a very rich conscious mind; can he not incarnate with your medium?”

Does he not make contact with the MIND of the medium and then experiment on you?

Does he not make contact with the WORDS of the medium and then experiment on you?

Does he not make contact with the physical environment of the medium and then experiment on you?

343 **Does he not make contact with the electrical environment of the medium and then experiment on you?”**

**‘THE MISSION OF GOLDEN AGE, PLAN OF THE LOYAL ONES’
(3)**

(Page: 22)

“This simple example would also illustrate that:

Human being is not an entity who would be put under any PRESSURE.

Human being is not an entity who would be IMPOSED on in any way.

Human being is not an entity who would be EXPERIMENTED on.

Human being is not an entity who would be taken advantage of due to his suffering.

Human being is not an entity who would be taken advantage of due to his wailing.

Human being is not an entity who would be taken advantage of due to his confusion.”

More passages from the same book, page: 53

“They manifest themselves as the LOYAL ONES within the community of human beings.

They manifest themselves as the INTELLECTUAL ONES within the community of human beings.

They manifest themselves with HIGH CONSCIENCE within the community of human beings.

They manifest themselves as the CREATORS within the community of human beings.

They manifest themselves as people who GUIDE the others within the community of human beings.”

As can be seen from the examples given above, in almost all cases, apart from a couple of word or sentences, all the messages conveyed are the same and they are repeated 3, 4, 5 or 6 times. According to our investigations, there are two reasons for this.

1. With these repetitions, the mediums who had been contacted with can be programmed in such a way that an area becomes active in their brain as in the case of using prayer beads to clear the mind, so that more people can be connected with them.

2. In cases where the mind is frequently congested due to mental thoughts, by repeating the same sentence more time can be saved.

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN



SATAN IS THE PROTECTOR!

Who does reveal the truth? Is it the Koran or is it the **JINNS** who present themselves as the **ALIENS**?

346

According to the Koran, the proclamations of the Hz. Mohammad (peace and blessings be upon him) and the Islamic scholars as well as the Gnostics whose ideas are within the scope of Islamic teaching, the **JINNS** that are named as the **SATAN** has **DEVILISH** qualities and they are the real enemies of humankind. They always want to lead people astray from the facts informed by the religion, prevent them from knowing the truth concerning the life beyond death, weaken their belief in *Allah*, allow them to rebel against the commands of *Allah* and refrain them from accepting the tenets expressed in the Koran as *Amantu* so by imposing various ideas like these onto humans, they spend their days.

The **JINNS** who will appear under the guise of **ALIENS** consider it their duty to delude human beings away from the truths of **Islamic religion**. As can be seen from the above statement, while on page 86 of the **KNOWLEDGE BOOK** they deny and impose the **SATAN** as a power that is produced by

the human imagination, take a look at what they say in the same book, the 15th fascicule, page number 204.

Since the third SIRIUS, that is, the Ilona constellation is the closest gateway to the second universe, friends whom you call Adam and Eve had been transferred to the first universe from the second universe from here. These friends were the first transfers and had been sent here as a triple code. They are ADAM–EVE–DEVIL.

1) ADAM is pure energy.

2) EVE is creative power.

3) DEVIL is bright consciousness.

347

ADAM and the DEVIL had been sent as protecting guard for EVE. Afterwards, many Adams and Eves had been transferred from the second universe and in this way, the group of mythological heroes; gods and goddesses had been formed. Godly rules had been prepared as the doctrines of these high consciousness (by their brain energies, they bring the medium they are in to a level suitable for life)."

Indeed, the **JINNS** are nothing other than **DEVILS** who claim that they are beings with supreme consciousness and they are like protective guardians under the guise of **ALIENS**.

So, what shall the **JINNS** with **DEVILISH** qualities perform? Of course, they will carry out **DEVILISH** acts.

* * *



HERE'S A SUPERB EXAMPLE OF AN ACT OF DEVILTRY

348

The **JINNS** with devilish nature present themselves as the **ALIENS** and further claim that in their messages they have given to mankind, they declare that they are ALLAH themselves. After conveying their messages in this manner, they start to drag the humankind into **ATHEIST** views, so let's take a good look at how they actually achieve this by underestimating the concept of **ALLAH**.

At this instant, please read and examine the following lines that we are going to narrate very carefully.

GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK

World Brotherhood Union

Year: 1991, Fourth Month, Fascicule No: 46 / Page No: 443

“Perhaps it may be contradictory to your consciousness totality to which you are habituated at the moment, but even (O) whom we have introduced to you as ALLAH until today will be transformed into crude matter form becoming

embodied just like you and living among you in this focal point and will establish personally the SINGLE WORLD STATE in the framework of the fourth order.”

Well, we are continuing with our narration.

The same book, the page no: 445

“(O), that total power mentioned as Allah had always transformed Himself into crude matter form and had always stepped down into those initial worlds while life had been created in the initial world which has been the main nucleus of each first *Gürz* (Atomic whole, main universe). He had always fertilized the world by His energy intensity and had thus established His order and had returned again to His place.”

349

Obviously, you have been paying attention here. They are talking about *Allah* who gets embodied in matter form and then returns to His place again.

That’s not all. We are continuing.

The same book, the page no: 446

“And now, ALLAH, that is, (O) has descended in physical form on the BETA NOVA world which is the initial main nucleus of the BETA GÜRZ (Main Universe). For this reason, HE is in close contact with you. And now, this power called (O) is awaiting the genuine human potentials in the nucleic worlds He has formed and will form.

As we have said before, at the moment, the initial nucleic world with the first universe of the BETA GÜRZ has been created. And ALLAH will live in His crude matter form as a human being among humans until the first Beta mini atomic is created and will personally introduce Himself to you.”

* * *

So, I wonder what you really think when you read about these things, does it not occur to you that in your brains, you start to make a connection with the concept of *Dajjal* (Antichrist), which is mentioned in the Islamic teaching?

According to the teachings of the Koran and Hz.Mohammad (Peace and blessings be upon him), as the day of judgement draws near, just before the descent of Jesus onto the earth, about 30 false prophets will come out and declare that the present religions are no longer applicable to anybody and therefore they will want from everybody to accept the religion they put forward instead. Soon after this event takes place, a being described by the name *Dajjal* (Antichrist) will appear and then claim that he is the long awaited '**MESSIAH**' or in other words the '**saviour**'.

350

This being referred to as the *Dajjal* (Antichrist) will claim that the world is living its final days and that he is the SUPREME LORD who has been worshipped until that very day. He would further claim that he is here to save those who believe in his commands and accept him as Allah the almighty, so in order to prove this claim he will manifest some extraordinary events.

The person who has the quality of being a *Mahdi* and moving along the direction of the teachings of the prophet Mohammad and the Koran will communicate the message to the mankind that the concept of '**ALLAH**' is endless, free from any limitation whatsoever and it is the only existence that brings the universe together. After that, the *Dajjal* (Antichrist) will come out and put this teaching into the test for the entire humankind and then he would declare exactly the opposite of this faith.

The *Dajjal* (Antichrist) who will claim himself as the '**ALLAH**' being awaited by the mankind will exercise his rule on the earth for some time and masses of people in the world will believe in him and follow his path. It has been stated in authentic *hadith* (sayings) books by the holy prophet of Islam that the *Dajjal* (Antichrist) will be killed by the prophet Jesus who will descend to the earth. This event is not to be misinterpreted in any way and that there is no doubt whatsoever that it will definitely take place at the end.

351

Likewise, at this present time, not only in Turkey but in many other parts of the world, those **JINNS** who introduce themselves as the **ALIENS** communicate the message that the supreme **LORD** of all the mankind will eventually descend to the earth together with the army of the **LORD of the WORLD** and those who are under their command.

The concept of Allah that is explained according to the teachings of Koran and the religion of Islam is something that is completely different than the concept of a **GOD** described here and this is outlined comprehensively in the chapter of **Ikhlas** (The Unity) in Koran.

Those who wish to read on the subject of the concept of Allah in Islamic religion can refer to our book titled '**Allah as Explained by Mohammad**'.

* * *



THE EMBODIED GODS OF ALIENS (JINNS)

Let us carry on exploring the concept of **'ALLAH'** from their own book of the **JINNS** who present themselves as the **ALIENS**.

352

GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK

1991 Fourth Month / Fascicule No: 46 - Page: 447

“However, the power called (O), that is, ALLAH is pulling away from you one by one His own essence energy which had been formed within your essence energy centres and thus is bringing a new ordinance to the ordinance of the folding universes. And at the moment, ALLAH will leave you alone the human power which is more powerful than Him by collecting from you one by one His power which is within you. By the powers He has attained from you, now, (O), too has created His crude matter form just like you and thus, has been embodied in BETA NOVA in a human appearance.

ALLAH, that is, (O) is obliged to transform Himself into crude matter form by collecting the partial reflection energies of His own energy particles which are within you.

Because, the reason of this being in a physical form is due to the fact that you will be unable to attract your own consciousness levels the energies beyond the dimension of **ALLAH** while you are in **BETA NOVA**. (O) will attract these energies by His bodily and cerebral power in **BETA NOVA** and will apply a gradual engraftment method to the energies He has collected from you and He will load His own power onto the energies He has attracted from you. He will later give back to you the total power He has created by this means and **ALLAH** who is the supervising power of His own dimension will introduce Himself to you in His bodily totality and He, Himself will pass to more advanced dimensions and will say farewell to you. Afterwards, you, as human potentials will take over the ordinances of the cosmoses. This is the very reason why **ALLAH** has been embodied in **BETA NOVA** and awaits you.”

After enlightening us further and giving us sufficient information on the subject of **ALLAH** who has been embodied in human appearance, the time has now come to explain the fact that our **ALIEN FRIENDS** claim that they also receive messages from Allah directly.

Let’s take a look at what they say in the same fascicule, on page: 451

“**ALLAH** whom you have known until today as (O) is me. Yes, do not be surprised. At the moment, I, too, live in **BETA NOVA** in a body. The **GRAND FATHER** who lives on the **UHUD** Mountain at the Omega dimension projects my commands from that mountain on universes, on cosmoses. (**UHUD** Mountain is a crystal mountain.) Each nucleic world present in my system is the exact twin of the world you are in. In fact, the **GRAND FATHER**, too, lives in a nucleic world

like this. Just like I live and await you in BETA NOVA at the moment. JESUS CHRIST is His son. However, the sexual reproduction here is imaginative, not physical.

He had received his gene engraftment seed from Archangel GABRIEL. Now, the time has come for talking with you like two friends.

Now, the time has come for telling and declaring the truth to those who wonder how I give messages to you. BETA NOVA is a green world, it is the (first main nucleus) of the BETA GÜRZ, my human being who has become human will form and live in.

I became embodied here by transforming my energy with all my power into crude matter, in order to come here. I came in order to be together with you.

And I will establish my order here, in the just world nucleus of my fourth order. Afterwards, after I establish and get my order going, I will leave my humanity order to my human beings within the GÜRZ of my human being and I will again return to my place. I can answer, without my intermediaries to all the questions you ask, just like it used to be until today. However, I can be together only with those who see the light of the consciousness of my consciousness totality. This message of mine is for you and for the essences who comprehend me.”

ALLAH (O)

Of course, that’s not all. The **JINNS** who are widely referred and known within the community as the **DEVIL** try to make people accept **ALLAH** under the guise of **ALIENS** and this so called Allah continues to give more messages and trick many of our people who are as naive as a child.

The same book, the same fascicule, page: 452

“Your missions are great, your obligations are numerous. My PRE-EMINENT guide helps you on this path. She will guide you in discovering your paths. The medium you are in is a medium which adds power to your power. You can directly hear my words only through this medium. My ALPHA channel which is a single channel brings to you all the voices of the FIRMAMENT on this path. My angels are my celestial astronauts who supervise the regular expansion of the universes.

My being is the root of the root of the total power which is the essence of the entire creation. Gods who were my celestial missionaries have rendered their missions and have terminated their periods.

355

Now, the MECHANISM OF LORDS which has formed the totality consciousness has been rendered effective.

The LORD of the present is RANTIMUS whom everyone knows as the GRAND FATHER who is the president of the RAN planet. RANTIMUS who is the father of JESUS CHRIST is holding under His control the period which equals to the expansion of the Universe. This will continue only until the end of the century you are in. That is, until the last month of 1999 world year (for this supervision.) The events which will take place afterwards will be transferred to the supervision of another channel.

And the torch of the GOLDEN AGE will be kindled. This channel will assemble all universes in a single channel in future years and thus, will render them single.

My essences, who do not know, see or recognize each other will meet in my single cosmos with their same construction,

same form and same language. And they will live happily during the happy humanity period which will begin from then on. This life will go on forever. The single galaxy in which all my living entities have united and will unite is **NOVA**. This galaxy is a galaxy equal to the power of 1 billion stars and suns. My genuine human beings are prepared for this medium. You have been ready until today anyway. You have been getting ready for this medium for centuries. Now, we come to the main point. From now on, we will be all together. You will be together with your loved ones, your dear ones and your belongings. In this medium, there is much action, no monotony. The one who transcends his/her time is the one who attains my voice.”

356

ALLAH (O)

If the script mentioned above is examined carefully, it would be seen that the **GOD** that is known as the **LORD** of the world is a president of a planet. And that planet’s name is called the **RAN**. According to the message conveyed in the sacred book that the aliens have sent, the **Lord** of the world is a **JINNI** whose name is **RANTIMUS**. At this instant, let us remember the following verse from the Koran.

Let us take a look at how the holy book Koran warns the people who believe in the **Aliens** or namely the **JINNS** from 1400 years ago.

“YET THEY MAKE THE JINNS EQUALS WITH ALLAH, (accept them as the Lord) THOUGH ALLAH DID CREATE THE JINNS”.

(Chapter: 6/ Verse: 100)

Apart from deceiving others, the **JINNS** have no knowledge whatsoever on anything else and almost everything they do is in a backwards fashion, so their writings too. As you have

seen from the above lines, when you read the word **RAN** backwards, you will get the word **NAR**. This is a word which means **FIRE** in Turkish language. Likewise, it is emphasized in Koran that the **JINNS** are beings created from the fire. The planet that is referred by the name **NAR** here is the planet of fire and the **JINNS** are also located in the environment of fire. The **JINNS** call this dimension as the dimension of **OMEGA**. In other words, this is the dimension that consists of rays of light. According to their definition, the name of their president in this dimension is called **RANTIMUS**. Here, the word is simply used to describe a leader whose structure is made of fire.

357 So, let us take a look at how the **DIMENSION of OMEGA** is explained as the dimension which belongs to the **JINNS**.

GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK

Fascicule 47 / Page: 460

“We would like to disclose to you the word HARAN which is the supervising mechanism of the dimension of the truth. Each letter of this word of totality is a cipher code connected to the frequency of a word. However, at the same time, it also symbolizes the FIRE dimensions of the mediums of truth. You know that the OMEGA dimension was also called the RAN planet. That is, the FIRE planet. The word fire utilized in this dimension expresses the powerful intensity of energies. However, RAN, that is opposite coding: NAR that is the word FIRE (in Turkish) is the blazing, flaming, shining fire. It has nothing to do with energy. HARAN is the power of fire of dimensions of truth.”

You could find detailed information concerning the reality of what the **JINNS** have confessed in the year 1991 in our book titled **JINNS and SPIRITS**, which we have written in 1971 and it is the only source of information, a unique book ever produced in this particular field. As can be seen from here, the **JINNS** confess in a very clear manner that they belong to a structure that is made of fire under the guise of **ALIENS**.

* * *

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN



UFOS AND FLYING SAUCERS

While **JINNS** describe themselves as **ALIENS** at the beginning, later on they talk about themselves as the extreme loyal servants of their Lords and here's how they describe **UFOS** on page 38 of the book that we have mentioned above.

360

“We are the missionaries of God who arrange the mechanisms that will be necessary for establishing the order and it is in this way that we can be of assistance to you.

The disks which you call FLYING SAUCERS (in other words UFOS) are our means of communication.”

In fact, even though they say that they are in touch with the **JINNS**, there are so many genuine good willed people especially from our circle of brothers who assume that they have seen so many **FLYING SAUCERS** or to put it shortly, they have seen the **UFOS**. What's more is that the majority of them are boarded onto these UFO ships and as a result, they have seen lights as well as many different colour combinations, which simply cannot be described. In addition to that, they can see so many dreams too even though they are awake.

However, it is most certain that in all of these situations, there is no concrete evidence of any alien spacecraft. Although they say that they can travel in between so many galaxies and move freely in space, they can never ever achieve travelling by using one of these flying saucers and go to a certain location in the world for example from Istanbul to Antalya or from Ankara or Izmir or from London to Istanbul in an instant.

Even though they give unlimited and countless suggestions, these are just mere words and in reality no concrete evidence has ever been substantiated by them.

361

The people they have tricked with the story of the **FLYING SAUCERS** can appear to them in many forms and through using their mediumistic qualities they could communicate with them under the guise of **LORD** or as the **SUPREME SPIRIT** or as the **ALIEN COMRADES** from outer space or even as **ALLAH**. From time to time, they can introduce themselves as the **ARCHANGEL** named **GABRIEL** and they want people to believe in that.

Let us explore this more in **GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK**

Fascicule No: 34 / Page No: 319

“At the moment, since the dimension of the book has been connected to the next higher reality, our Mustafa Molla has been appointed as an assistant to other channels. Mustafa gives messages to all channels in the dimension of Alpha in accordance with their frequency powers with names to which various societies are sympathized. The name he uses in the Islamic dimension is Mustafa Molla. He is the Archangel Gabriel.”



DECEPTIONS AND DECEPTIONS... WHAT IF YOU ARE BEING FOOLED!

362

Well, the main job of these ALIENS is to deceive humans and fool them by giving them false hopes as well as giving them frightening feelings. They put them under their domination and make them believe that they are the chosen ones so that they feel more flattered.

These beings who try to fool the mankind claim that they are either from the **JINN** kind or the **DEVIL** kind and they trick the humans with the story that in reality, they are superior beings. They also trick people into believing that they are ALIEN saviours from outer space and they make great efforts to put them under their domination by making them compliments most of the time so that they can make them believe that they are the chosen ones.

In spite of the fact that the **JINNS** lead people astray with such false beliefs, let us take a close look at how Koran warns people and points out their harmful effects.

“SATAN DID NOT PROSTRATE. HE SAID: I AM BETTER THAN HIM. YOU CREATED ME OF FIRE, WHILST HIM YOU DID

CREATE OF CLAY. HE WAS SCORNFUL AND HE BECAME ONE OF THE UNBELIEVERS (He covered the truth)”

(Chapter: 38 / Verse: 74, 76)

“ONLY IBLEES (THE SATAN) DID NOT PROSTRATE HIMSELF. HE WAS ONE OF THE JINN”.

(Chapter: 18 / Verse: 50)

In the old days, the being from the family of JINN was known by the name *Azazil*. Whenever he was commanded to **‘PROSTRATE BEFORE ADAM’** he had fallen into such a state of ambiguity that he was nicknamed as **‘IBLEES (SATAN)’**. He did not accept to prostrate and he spoiled all mankind, in other words he began to bring his devilish qualities into action and therefore he was addressed as the **SATAN**. From then onwards, all the **JINNS** were addressed with the nickname **SATANS**. This is because the **JINNS** were attacking on humans with all their devilish powers.

363

Let us take a look at how some of the verses stated in Koran inform us on the subject of **JINNS** who are named as **DEVILS**:

“THEY TOOK THE EVIL ONES, IN PREFERENCE TO ALLAH, FOR THEIR FRIENDS AND PROTECTORS, AND THINK THAT THEY RECEIVE GUIDANCE.”

(Chapter: 7 / Verse: 30)

“SATAN MADE THEIR DEEDS SEEM FAIR UNTO THEM AND KEPT THEM BACK FROM THE PATH OF ALLAH.”

(Chapter: 29 / Verse: 38)

“BUT THE SATAN MADE AN EVIL SUGGESTION TO THEM AND HE SWORE TO THEM BOTH: I AM A SINCERE ADVISER UNTO YOU. SO BY DECEIT HE BROUGHT ABOUT THEIR FALL.”

(Chapter: 7 / Verse: 20-21-22)

“O YOU CHILDREN OF ADAM, THAT YOU SHOULD NOT WORSHIP SATAN; FOR THAT HE WAS TO YOU AN ENEMY AVOWED! AND CERTAINLY HE LED ASTRAY A GREAT MULTITUDE OF PEOPLE FROM AMONG YOU.”

(Chapter: 36 / Verse: 60-62)

“THE DEVIL HAS GAINED MASTERY OVER THEM SO HE HAS MADE THEM FORGET THE REMEMBRANCE OF ALLAH. THEY ARE THE DEVIL’S PARTY. TRULY, IT IS THE PARTY OF THE SATAN THAT WILL PERISH.”

(Chapter: 58 / Verse: 19)

“IF ANYONE WITHDRAWS HIMSELF FROM THE REMEMBRANCE OF (ALLAH) MOST GRACIOUS, WE APPOINT FOR HIM AN EVIL ONE, TO BE AN INTIMATE COMPANION TO HIM. THEY SURELY TURN THEM FROM THE WAY OF ALLAH, AND YET THEY DEEM THAT THEY ARE RIGHTLY GUIDED.”

(Chapter: 43 / Verse: 36-37)

“AND SATAN INDEED FOUND HIS CALCULATION TRUE CONCERNING THEM, FOR THEY FOLLOWED HIM, ALL SAVE A GROUP OF TRUE BELIEVERS. BUT HE HAD NO AUTHORITY OVER THEM, EXCEPT THAT WE MIGHT DISTINGUISH THE MAN WHO BELIEVES IN THE HEREAFTER FROM HIM WHO IS IN DOUBT CONCERNING IT.”

(Chapter: 34 / Verse: 20-21)

Because of their devilish characteristics, the **JINNS** are described in this manner and they do whatever they can in their power in order to lead people astray from their religion on a continual basis.

Because their actual structure, facial looks and the environment in which they live is a complete mystery to humans, they use many different names and they make up all kinds of stories virtually on any subject. Furthermore, they invent imaginary universes beyond other universes and they try to associate the Lord and the God with values connected with numbers and mathematical forms, like **cube root of Lords and square root of Gods** etc. These beings who keep people busy all the time with such false ideas has managed to fool so many countless people on the face of earth at this present time and they have taken them under their domination.

365

Before we present you with the actual evidence relating to documents that is oriented towards the world as well as relating to the deception of **FLYING SAUCERS, UFOS, SPACE SHIPS** and **ALIENS**, let us take a close look on what type of institutions they have established in Turkey and how they manage to make these widespread.

Please examine the rules and articles stated in this section carefully.

GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK

1991 Third Month / Fascicule No: 45 – Page No: 436

“Now, let us mention briefly the operational ordinance of the totalities of (18). Normally, the centres of three

totalities of (18) we wish to establish in each city are considered as the actual reflecting focal point. Also numerous totalities of (18) may be established in the same city only after this total centre is formed. The first three persons who will form the foundation of a totality of (18) are considered in the operational ordinance of the system as the direct missionaries with covenants. And each one who constitutes this triplet is obliged to take a friend of his/hers whom he/she believes in and trusts by getting the approvals of the friends who constitute the triple totality. By this means, 3 persons + assistants of each one = 6 persons are directly connected to the system and they take the mission of being the spokespersons of the system. Afterwards, individuals who will wind the skein of the totality of (18) are accepted one by one into the totality by receiving the approvals of this totality of (6).

366

Even if one person out of this totality of (6) does not accept the proposed person, that person cannot enter the totality. At that moment, the person who refuses is directly connected to the system. His/her individual consciousness can never play a part in this medium. In this manner, the same coordinate levels are integrated by the aids of the system. Negativities occurring among the first three missionaries with covenants who constitute the totality of (18) cause the disbanding of the entire totality. But, afterwards:

- 1) This triplet, one by one is obliged to establish a totality of (18) each. (This means that he/she is responsible for the 18 brothers and sisters.)**
- 2) If friends who complete the totality of (18) render their duty without being disbanded for one world year, after the**

last 18th individual's entrance, the names of all these friends are written on a piece of paper and are kept in a file. (These names are also registered on the diskette at the same moment.)

3) One world year will be recounted beginning with the entrance date of the person who has come for completing the totality of (18) in the place of the individual who had left the totality of (18), for example, 6 or 10 months later. (Attention will especially be paid to this matter. Otherwise, the diskette registration cannot be made.)

4) Those who wish, among the individuals who are able to maintain the totality of (18) for one or more world years, may constitute a second totality of (18) by asking the permission of their totality. (In this permission, the permission of 17 persons is a must. And the acceptance of the person whom he/she will bring in his/her place will be rendered by the approval of 17 persons.)

5) The individual who attempts to establish the second totality of (18) is responsible for that totality of (18) for a life time. In case he/she can not maintain the continuation of the totality of (18) he/she establishes, he/she loses his/her right also in the first totality of (18).

6) This operational ordinance is directly the operational ordinance of advanced realities. And it is desired that it should be conveyed and applied to your planet exactly as it is.

7) NO TOTALITY OF (18) CAN GO OUT OF THE OPERATIONAL ORDER THE SYSTEM HAS GIVEN.

8) Each totality of (18) is responsible for its own constitution.

9) NO ONE IN THE TOTALITY OF (18) IS AUTHORIZED TO TRAIN EACH OTHER OR TO IMPOSE HIS/HER INDIVIDUAL THOUGHTS.

10) NO TOTALITY OF (18) CAN EVER BRING SUGGESTIONS PARALLEL TO ITS TERRESTRIAL CONSCIOUSNESS TO THE OTHER TOTALITIES OF (18), NOR CAN IT REBUKE THEM.

11) Each individual in the totality of (18) is responsible only for his/her own self. (Criticizing their brothers and sisters in accordance with their individual consciousness causes the chips to break.)

12) Making a demand for the totality of (18) is a humane responsibility. Here, one becomes willing for the exams for being accepted to the presence of ALLAH and thus covenants are made through the essence.

13) It is not necessary for those who will enter this totality of (18) to be possessors of advanced consciousness and knowledge. It is considered enough for them just to render exactly the desired missions by the totality of intellect, logic, awareness, by allegiance consciousness and in a totality of love.

14) Each individual in the totality of (18) is obliged to give the totality of (9) pages constituting the first fascicule of the knowledge book on the special day mission he/she will chose himself/herself. (During this service, the characteristics of the book will be explained by speech.) On that day, reflections on the same coordinate are card-indexed one by one and thus are collected in the (main) diskette. The aura reflections are made by these diskettes.

15) If any individual within the totality of (18) can not render the fascicule service that week due to various

reasons, he/she is obliged to serve the fascicules remaining in his/her hand following week on the same mission day. (This is a karma obligation program.) The services made on other days are not registered.

16) Individuals within the (18) can change their private mission days with other days in compulsory circumstances and with the condition that this will not happen more than three times.

17) Individuals who will not be able to come to the totality of (18) that day due to their very important excuses are obliged to inform their excuses to a telephone determined formerly on the morning of the working day of the totality of (18), even if they are in the remotest continent. This is a program of responsibility.

18) The aura of the individual whose connection is made on that day by phone is projected by the plan on the totality of (18) he/she is in and thus the aura chain is completed.

19) Each individual who has self-confidence, who masters his personality, who is conscious of his/her obligation, who is tolerant and loving can apply for this work.

20) In this operational ordinance, there is no forcing, no compulsion or imposition. Everyone who accepts to act in accordance with the work the system desires may work in the totality of (18).

21) In this operational order connected to automatism, any individual who creates negativity automatically disqualifies himself/herself from the medium.

- 22) The system will always transfer friends who are more responsible in place of friends who do not or can not render the missions which are obligatory in the totality of (18).
- 23) In place of a disbanded totality of (18), always the remaining people will immediately be oriented to establish a totality of (18).
- 24) The system never stops by any means. More totalities will be rendered effective in place of the disbanded totalities.
- 25) Unified fields used to be created once by individual thought forms have now been rendered effective as Mass Reflection Systems due to the scarcity of the time.
- 26) This reflection system is connected to all the totalities of (18) which will exhibit the same operational order of an order connected to the automatism.
- 27) Until these totalities of (18) reach the required level, negativities will break the chips of the operational order and totalities of (18) will be made to be established anew. (even if only 1 person remains out of the totality of (18)).
- 28) By this means, the perfect reflection totality will be formed through the operations made during the process of time.
- 29) Each totality of (18) is a reflection focal point.
- 30) Each totality of (18) is the mission of the Knowledge Book on the dimension of the reality.
- 31) This mission continues its work directly in connection with the level of the ALL-MERCIFUL.

32) By the operations done, the Knowledge Book will form its aura in the universal ordinance of the dimension of the ALL-MERCIFUL, as a result of the reflections of your thought forms.

33) The unified field of this Knowledge Book will be formed in three cosmic ages and only afterwards, the reflection program on the ordinance of the cosmoses will be started.

34) At the moment, programs of unification are in effect in the ordinance of cosmoses.

35) The Knowledge Book is projected on three totalities at the moment. The first close magnetic aura formed here will become complete here and thus will be projected on the other totalities b the reflection system from your planet which is the nucleus of the book.

371

36) The Knowledge Book which is the book of unification will also be projected on those orders just as the way we are reaching you at this moment by cosmic reflections and just as the way the book is dictated to you through this path.

37) For this reason, the operational order of the totality of (18) (in accordance with the given directives) is necessary and very important for the formation of the magnetic aura of the Knowledge Book.

38) Each totality of (18) is, one by one responsible for the missions it will render in the direction of the same coordinate.

39) At the moment, in the reflection on the same coordinate which is required of you, the (Knowledge Book) is the matter in question.

40) DURING THE WORK DONE IN THE TOTALITY OF (18), DIFFERENT CHANNEL TALK AND CONNECTIONS OUTSIDE OF THE KNOWLEDGE BOOK CAN NOT BE MADE. DIFFERENT MESSAGES CAN NOT BE READ, DISCUSSIONS ON THE KNOWLEDGE BOOK CAN NOT BE MADE. (In this way, the aura will not be shattered.)

41) If desired, the Knowledge Book may be read only with the consciousness of Allegiance in the medium of the totality of (18).

42) If the totality of (18) has not yet been in number, the required reflection can never be obtained. (Only the totality of (18) forms the reflection.) For this reason, the system has for now rendered effective the mixed reflection program.

372

43) The totality of (18), or more, constituted in every city will assemble together as a totality of love each month and by this means, for the first time, direct group reflections will be made from your planet.

44) These reflections are formed not by the totality of consciousness but by the totality of love. However, direct coordinate reflections are formed by totalities of consciousness.

45) We believe that in future years, direct reflections in your planet will be rendered by these totalities of consciousness and we trust you.

46) Formerly, operation and dissemination order of the Knowledge Book had been declared to you by the system. And now, we announce the operational ordinance of the (18).

47. If friends who wish to form the Totalities of (18) which will make Reflections on the same Coordinate read, one by one, all the Obligations dictated above, article by article, and apply them consciously by digesting them and by treading on the designed path with a Totality of Love; this will form the most positive results. It is presented for your information.

SYSTEM

Page No: 439

IT IS INFORMATION FOR THE INTEGRATED CONSCIOUSNESS

(It is answer to thoughts)

Dear Mevlana,

We would like to give you a very clear Message about the Totalities of (18). It has been considered necessary to dictate it, article by article, so that the Message can be understood better and that it will not be open to any interpretation. Write, please:

- 1. There is no place ever in the Totality of (18) for Individualistic Thoughts.**
- 2. For those who will enter the Totality of (18) any forcing is out of the question.**
- 3. The Totality of (18) is a demand for the Medium of Unity.**
- 4. The Individual invited to Totality of (18) is first obliged to take under supervision himself/herself in his/her Own Self.**
- 5. The wish of those who will enter the Totality of (18) is not a phenomenon originating from Thought. This is the**

demand for the Exam of the Skies for an Individual who feels that he/she is integrated.

6. This is a Pledge, this is an Allegiance, this is to stamp the SEAL OF HEART on the service made on the path of ALLAH.

7. An Individual in each Totality of 18 is responsible for his/her Own Self.

8. Worldly Problems can never enter the Totality of (18). In such Mediums, always the Universal Reflecting Chips are damaged.

9. Each Individual within the Totality of (18) is a Totality beyond the SIBLINGS within the MOTHER'S womb.

10. This Totality is UNIVERSAL BROTHERHOOD. And in the Universal Brotherhood, there is no EVIL INTENTION.

11. Consciousnesses who were not able to attain the virtues mentioned above are automatically Disqualified by the System, by their own Desires.

12. Susceptibility, Doubt, Anger, Rancour, Hatred, being Unaffectionate in the Totality of (18) returns to the one who carries these Feelings, becoming empowered in accordance with the System of Reflection.

13. Until a total foundation of Love – Respect – Brotherhood is formed in the Totality of (18), Supervision of the Coordinates is under the control of System.

14. This control is in effect until the Humane Consciousness who constitute the Totality of (18) settles in the same Consciousness Pot.

15. At the Moment, a Mixed (18) Reflection Totality is constituted of those who make Reflections on the same

Coordinate Level among the Totalities constituting the Totalities of (18).

16. In Future, Genuine Human Consciousness will form this Totality.

17. This Humane Totality will be a Totality who will be Loving – Patient – Tolerant and Forgiving who will be able to place the Enemy over the head like a crown and who will not carry a negative Thought for no one, including His/Her Own Self.

18. JOINING THIS TOTALITY IS A UNIVERSAL COVENANT. IT IS CALLING TO THE VOICE OF THE SKIES. IT IS NOT IMPLORING TO ALLAH, BUT RISING TOWARDS HIM.

375

19. The Totality of (18) is a Missionary work. It is the Formation of Universal Auras. And each Magnetic Aura has formed until today by the Totality Reflections of such Consciousness.

20. Magnetic Fields and Universal Totalities of the Mission of MOSES – JESUS CHRIST – MOHAMMAD had been formed by this means.

21. The Individual Missions of those Periods were an Operational Ordinance pertaining to that particular Individual's Salvation. And it was a Preparation on the Path of ALLAH.

22. Now, the Mass Consciousness Reflection of the Totality of (18) (on the same coordinate level) will form the Magnetic Aura of the KNOWLEDGE BOOK on Allah's Essence Dimension.



**A PLACE WHERE FREEDOM OF
EXPRESSION DOES NOT EXIST AND ALL
DISCUSSIONS ARE FORBIDDEN!!!**

376

Let us pay attention to the kind of activities the **ALIENS** perform under the roof of their organizations that they wish to establish in Turkey where the prime purpose is to provide a deep sympathy, love and freedom of expression for all those humans so that they can make universal progress:

DURING THE WORK DONE IN THE TOTALITY, DIFFERENT CHANNEL TALK AND CONNECTIONS OUTSIDE OF THE KNOWLEDGE BOOK CANNOT BE MADE. DIFFERENT MESSAGES CANNOT BE READ!

DISCUSSIONS ON THE KNOWLEDGE BOOK CAN NOT BE MADE!

THERE IS NO PLACE EVER IN THE TOTALITY FOR INDIVIDUALISTIC THOUGHTS!

NO HUMANLY THOUGHT CAN BE APPLIED TO ANY OF THE SUGGESTIONS GIVEN UNTIL TODAY ABOUT THE TOTALITY!

THIS IS A PLEDGE, THIS IS AN ALLIGIANCE AND THIS IS TO STAMP THE SEAL OF HEART ON THE SERVICE MADE ON THE PATH OF ALLAH!

THE KNOWLEDGE BOOK MAY BE READ ONLY WITH THE CONSCIOUSNESS OF ALLIGIANCE IN THE MEDIUM OF THE TOTALITY!

JOINING THIS TOTALITY IS A UNIVERSAL COVENANT!

Once again, let us pay attention to a very important factor mentioned in Koran as a sign of warning. Take a look at the verse number 128 in the 6th chapter, which say:

“YOU! THE JINN COMMUNITY, YOU HAVE TAKEN THE MAJORITY OF THE HUMANS UNDER YOUR DOMINATION.”

The fact that **JINNS** can dominate people under various titles is a warning made in Koran, which is a very important issue for those intellectual minds.

* * *



REINCARNATION (TANASUKH) - A HINDU PHILOSOPHY

378

Another second method which is implemented by the JINNS is to separate the communities from the religion and from Islam as this is included in their actual program, so that they can make the **HINDU Philosophy** widespread as much as possible.

Whether it may be under the disguise of messages given by the **ALIENS** or under the name of **SPIRITS**, the BUDDHA is being praised and exalted so that spreading the superiority of the Hindu Philosophy among the community can be achieved by those devoted individuals who entered into their service.

GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK

Fascicule 20 / Page: 177

“Theosophy is a teaching system the goal of which is to attain God. This science had, for the first time, followed the path of reaching Universal Consciousness by the Orange Sect. Afterwards, monks of BUDDHA have followed this

path. BUDDHA is the only Pre-eminent One in your planet who had officially started a new path and who had trained people for this Consciousness.”

At the root of this philosophy there lies the doctrine of ‘reincarnation’, which means ‘coming back to this material world once again after physical death in order to evolve by being reborn in a new body’. This view is strongly rejected by the Islamic religion which further emphasize that those who tasted death will continue to live on different platforms being in their spirit bodies until the eternity without returning ever again.

379

There are so many verses and sayings of the prophet which explains that the reincarnation is impossible and we have given extensive knowledge regarding what they are in related chapters. As an example let us consider the meaning of the following verse:

“O My Lord! I seek refuge in Thee from suggestions of the evil ones. And I seek refuge in Thee, my Lord, lest they be present with me. (In Falsehood will they be) Until, when death comes to one of them, he says:

O My Lord! Send me back (to the world)...! So that I may do the right in that which I have left behind and make use of my life which I’ve spent for nothing!

By no means! What they say will never come true! Behind them is a barrier, the universe of graves until the day they’ll be raised.”

(Chapter of Al-Mumenuon - The Believers, Verses 97-100)

As it can be seen from this verse, soon after the human beings experience the event known as death, it is absolutely

impossible for them to come back to the world ever again until such time when **'HASHR'** comes, where they will be gathered all together.

* * *

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN



THE REALITY OF DEATH

As the subject we deal with is about death, I would like to explain what the reality of death is all about. It is worthwhile to consider the reality of this subject in detail as many people who are involved with the religion are completely unaware of this situation.

382

So what is death? What sort of event is it? What happens when death takes place? Let us consider the reality of this event known as death in a realistic manner from the Islamic point of view. So that we can fully understand what the reality of death is all about and see whether or not we can come back to this world alive soon after death. Let us see how.

WHAT IS DEATH? THE TRUTH OF DEATH

It is most unfortunate that the reality of 'DEATH' is not fully grasped in its true sense in our present time, which is why it is usually assumed to be a situation whereby a person's life comes to an end. In actual fact, DEATH is not the end of something and therefore it is nothing more than a transition from the physical world to a world beyond the matter! It is merely a transformation process!

Soon after a person's separation from his biological body takes place by the event indicated as **DEATH**, his life continues either in the grave or outside within a 'spirit' or a hologram-like body consisting from a collection of frequencies. In other words, **DEATH** is the continuation of the life in a spirit body as soon as the life in this world comes to an end in a physical body.

The Holy book Koran that informs the fundamentals of Islam explains the event known as 'death' as follows:

'Every SOUL will taste DEATH!'

383

In actual fact, the term **DEATH** implies to a kind of transition process whereby the biological body is departed and as a result, the life is transformed into a spirit body. As soon as the brain ceases to function, the bioelectric energy that is outspread to the body is disconnected and the body will then lose the electromagnetic force which keeps the spirit tied to body. In this way, the human **SPIRIT** can be released to a new life that is completely independent from the physical body. This is what really is meant by the event known as **DEATH**.

Since all the activities realized through the brain of a person throughout his lifetime are stored in his spirit, the person can therefore access the spiritual dimension without feeling any change in his condition upon dying. The person continues his life within a form known as the **SPIRIT**, exactly in the same manner as he was within his physical body! However, there is one difference. Although he is still completely alive and conscious, he cannot use his physical body any more! This is similar to the case of a person who has experienced the permanent vegetative state as if he was alive and conscious! He can observe everything going on outside, he can hear and

sense them all, but he can never communicate or respond in any way to his physical surroundings in the outside world!

The great Islamic Scholar and Sufi *Ibrahim Hakki Erzurumi* recounts the event of death in his book entitled **“Marifatname (Book of Gnosis)** by referring to a saying of Mohammad Aleyhesselaam (Peace and blessings be upon him) as follows:”

“The deceased (one who tasted death) knows those who washed his body, who shrouded the corpse, who performed the funeral service for him, who attended his funeral procession, who descended the corpse into the grave and who prompted over his grave!”

384

The message **“Do not cry out by slapping your cheeks and tearing your clothes beside the deceased for he is tortured by your wailing!”** indicates that the deceased person will be seeing you and as a result feeling worried because of your emotional state.

Let us pay attention to the following saying of *Rasool of Allah*, which will make us comprehend very clearly that the person who tasted the death and lost his tie with his physical body in the grave will still be living in an aware and conscious state within his spirit and he will be hearing the addressing from outside:

As Abu Talhah narrated:

On the day of the battle of *Badr*, the messenger of *Allah* (peace and blessings of Allah be upon him) ordered that the corpses of twenty-four leaders from the Quraish tribe should be collected together and then thrown into one of the dirty dry wells of *Badr*. Thus, the dirty well has become even dirtier with the addition of new ones.

It was the habit of the Rasool (messenger) of *Allah* that whenever he conquered the enemy tribes, he used to stay at the battlefield for three days. So, on the third day of the battle of *Badr*, he ordered that his camel be saddled. Then the load for the road was put upon the camel. As the messenger of *Allah* set out, his Companions followed him as they talked among themselves that he was proceeding for some great purpose.'

At last, the messenger of *Allah* halted at the edge of the well where the killed had been thrown and he addressed the corpses by their names and their fathers' names:

385

"O Abu Jahl b. Hisham, O Umayya b. Khalaf, O Utba b. Rab'ila, O So-and-so!! Would it have pleased you if you had obeyed *Allah* and His Messenger? O the Killed! We have indeed found the victory that our Lord promised us. Have you too found true the victory your Lord promised you?"

On hearing his speech, *Omar* asked:

"O Allah's Apostle! How do you address to people who are already dead and cadaverous?"

Thereupon the messenger of *Allah* replied:

"I swear by the One in whose hand Muhammad's soul is that what I am saying to them, even you cannot hear more distinctly than they!"

As can be seen, in this event that is recounted in *Bukhari*, the messenger of *Allah* corrects a great misunderstanding. No any other *hadith* (sayings) can be better than this to correct such a false belief that "people are laid into their graves as dead and they rise to live again on the Day of Resurrection."

In actual fact, people are put into graves in such a state that they are totally conscious and alive, just as same as in our everyday life and they can hear the addressing made by other people from outside to them so easily as if they are outside.

Othman bin Afwan (May Allah be pleased with him) who is the third caliph to the messenger of *Allah* used to shed tears until his beard got wet if he stood by a grave. For this reason, he was asked once:

“You are not crying because you remember heaven and hell, but why do you shed tears, is it because of the fear of the grave?”

386

Othman answered:

“I have heard from the messenger of Allah that the grave is certainly the first of stations in the next world! If a person is freed from there, it will be easier to be released from the others to come. If he fails to become free from there however, then others to come will be more severe!”

Othman then continued as follows:

The messenger of *Allah* said that: **“I have never seen a terrible sight more HORRIFYING than that of a grave!”**

Standing by the grave of *Saad bin Muaz*, who is a leading Islamic figure as well as an Islamic martyr by the messenger of Allah (may *Allah's* peace be upon him) attending his funeral said the following words:

“Such a distinguished servant was he that heaven trembled and its doors were opened for him and thousands of angels came on earth. Even he felt so squeezed into the grave that his bones almost crackled! If it were possible to escape from

the torment of the grave and the afflictions after death, it would first have been bestowed on Saad! He was immediately delivered from such afflictions owing just to the spiritual state he had reached; that is all!"

Now, let us think for a moment. If people in their graves were not alive and unconscious, then how would such a torment ever be possible?

It was once asked to the messenger of *Allah*:

"O Allah's Apostle! Who is the most sagacious and most prudent among the believers?"

He replied as follows:

"Those who most often remember what befall a man on death and prepare themselves in the best manner for the life beyond death. They are the wisest, the most conscious and aware ones."

In another statement made by him, the *Rasool* (Messenger) of Allah says that:

"The most conscious and the most farther-sighted man is he who makes himself subject to divine orders and who deals with the deeds that will bring benefit after death. Weak is he who remains dependent on his own desires and then expects favour from ALLAH!"

Ibn Masood, who was among the companions of *Rasool* (Messenger) of *Allah*, tells the following about the torment in the grave:

"As I have heard from Rasool (Messenger) of Allah that:

- "Sinners will surely be exposed to the punishment of the grave; the beasts even have a sense of hearing their cries."

The following is narrated from Abu Said al Khudri. *Allah's* Apostle (May Allah's Peace be upon him) said that:

"The unbeliever is obsessed by ninety nine monsters in his grave, each biting and stinging him until Doomsday. If any one of them had ever breathed over the earth, no grass would ever be able to grow then!"

The following is also narrated from *Ibn Omar*. The *Rasool* (Messenger) of Allah said that:

"When anyone of you dies, he is shown his place both in the morning and in the evening. If he is one of the people of Paradise; he is shown his place in it, and if he is from the people of the Hell-Fire; he is shown his place there-in. Then it is said to him, 'This is your place till Allah resurrect you on the Day of Resurrection.'"

388

Now let us pay further attention to another point here. Take a look at this sentence that we recite from *Amantu* (I believe):

"Wal baa'th u bad'al MAWT" (I believe to revive right after DEATH).

Examine this carefully!

It is not being said: **"Wal baa`thu bad'al Qiyaamah (Doomsday)"**. In other words, the event that is referred to by the word **ba's** is not the one which takes place after **Doomsday** but it is the event that comes after **TASTING the DEATH!**

In this world, we live in our physical body and at the same time being within the spirit body that this physical body produced. As soon as the death is tasted, the human spirit is then released from the physical body and the life does go on in the grave until Doomsday, this time in a spirit, which

experienced the death. Later on, during the term when the earth is corrupted in the heat of the Sun, which is known as **“Doomsday”**, it is revived once again on the basis of its current characteristics. And eventually, the lives of all those bodies are restored once again by means of **ba's** (revival after death) for the very last time in accordance with the environment that they reach.

When we are in the grave, are we going to have the same consciousness and perception in addition to having identical comprehension mechanism as we have at this moment?

Abdullah bin Omar is the person who narrates us on this subject. During a conversation with the *Rasool* (Messenger) of *Allah* about the two angels known as *Munkaar* and *Nakeer* who comes in the grave and question the people in their graves, *H. Omar* asked the following:

“O the Messenger of Allah! Are we going to be awake in the grave?”

He said: “Of course you will. The same as you are now!”

So, what happens if a person who tasted the death has been put to the grave in a conscious state, being in a physical body which is completely out of use? Let us learn the answer to this from *Anas*:

The *Rasool* (Messenger) of *Allah* has said:

“When a human being is laid in his grave and his companions return, he even hears their footsteps leaving his grave. As they leave, two angels come to him, make him sit and then ask:

‘What did you used to say about this man named Mohammed?’

If he is a faithful believer, he will answer:

‘I bear witness that Mohammed is the servant and Apostle of Allah’.

On giving his answer, it will be said to him:

“Have a look at your place in the Hell-Fire! Allah has given you a place in Paradise instead of it’. The *Rasool* (Messenger) of Allah added: The dead person will then see both of his places that he will go in Paradise and in Hell. But if he is a non-believer or a hypocrite, he will then answer to angels:

‘I have no idea, but I used to say nothing more than what the people used to say!’ It will be said to him:

‘Neither did you know nor did you seek guidance from those who had knowledge!’ Then he will be hit with an iron hammer between his two ears, and he will cry and that cry will be heard by whatever approaches him except human beings and JINNS”. (Bukhari)

In order to conclude the subject, let us finally give the following *hadith*:

“The person who tasted the death will be tortured because of the wailings of his relatives over him.”

The *Rasool* (Messenger) of Allah has given so many traditions concerning this subject, which can be studied further in related *hadith* (sayings) books.

So here is the conclusion:

A human being NEVER DIES, BUT HE TASTES THE DEATH!

What this means is that, by tasting the death, the person loses his connection with his physical body and from then

onwards carries on living his life within a kind hologram-like body known as the **SPIRIT** made up of frequencies. For this reason alone, whoever has been laid into the grave is in fact a conscious state. And they keep on living there in a conscious state until the Resurrection day. On that day, each person obtains a new body suitable to the conditions of that particular day.

As you can see, such a life will eventually be encountered by every person! Those who wish to investigate this subject further could check the validity of our explanations from the appropriate sources.

* * *



ALIEN DECEPTION

Let us now take a closer look on how the **REALITY OF DEATH** stated in Islamic sources as explained in the above lines are being deviated, simply by accepting that the fundamentals concerning its reality remain unchanged but, the efforts needed to perform in this world for its preparation are completely disregarded.

392

GOLDEN AGE KNOWLEDGE BOOK

Fascicule: 29 / Page: 267

“The knowledge of seven celestial is received in the FOURTH DIMENSION. This place is called the dimension of HEAVEN. There are four layers in this dimension. It is the second evolutionary station. There, you are subjected to the 7 celestial knowledge of evolution. In this dimension, you live with BIOLOGICAL BODIES, just like in the world. However, there is the following difference: You come to the world through birth and you live there embodied. But, you come here by leaving your terrestrial bodies and you revive by your BODIES of LIGHT being beamed up to your bodies

present in here. And you instantly stand up in your in your 30 year old forms. You complete your evolution in this dimension without getting old at all.”

You will recall that the book stating that ‘**HEAVEN, JINN or SATAN**’ did never exist on the page 86 have given the messages in following years that these were rejected completely and therefore they were all accepted consecutively in various places.

As a matter of fact, the duty of the **JINNS** is to concentrate on issues which are stated in many religious sources in a metaphorical way and pretend as if they are explaining these issues, but in reality they fool people into believing that these metaphorical explanations are quite distinctive realities that are outside the religion.

393

Another good example of such a deceitfully clever joke could be the case of the messages conveyed to the mediums by those extraterrestrial beings named as **UFOs** who are assumed to be travelling in the space in **SPACE SHIPS**.

* * *



MESSAGES FROM UFOS

In this section, we will provide you with some examples concerning the messages conveyed to the mediums by those **JINNS** believing them who declare that they come from various planets and they are in contact with extraterrestrial beings named as **UFOS**.

394

ALIEN GABRIEL

O my dear children on the earth; hear me from a distance. I am the SPACE SHIP where I spent so much of my time on, which is ready to take all those who will yet to be brought up. I am the same SPACE SHIP who was on the duty on the night when Sananda (Jesus) was born in Bethlehem. I was the Gabriel who was seen by the Virgin Mary.

In the near future, I will stop by the Earth. I will prepare all the comrades for an initiation process that will take place on the Space Ship. Some people among you who will be prepared will be taken to the planet Sirius and while some of you will be taken to the planet called Clarion. Others will

go to planet Venus and Mars. Therefore, the son of the Earth is waiting for the New Age, the Light Age.

ALIEN ZOLTON

I am Zolton; I salute you with love and peace. I brought greetings to you from the centre of Sector system of Vela. On this occasion, I would like to present you with the summary of the events, which would affect your solar system in the near future.

The seven planets which are inhabited from Mercury to Saturn are all going through stages connected with the stability conditions. Due to several reasons, your planet will be subject to changes relating to the precession caused by the spinning of the earth's axis. With respect to others, your planet is in a state that is far more unstable. For this reason alone, when compared with them, you are weak in terms of protecting the public on the earth. Because other planets have space ships and they are able to deal with life situations in a better way, they will therefore manage to save their public.

Geological disturbances would lead to catastrophes which will continue for about 3 days. During this period, continents will rise from the oceans, the islands will vanish and tidal waves will rise to a level that is approximately 180 metres high from the current sea level, which will sweep off the entire planet.

The human beings living on the earth are granted with many false prophecies concerning the issue of advancing their consciousness to higher levels. This is foolishness. Under the directive of Scharee system and with the assistance of

sufficient fleet carriers and landing ships, the space ships coming from various systems are ready to pick up your entire population together with their community from the earth in about 15 minutes. The alleged incident is about to approach quite rapidly. We cannot give you a precise date but, you can be absolutely sure that we are fully in control of this situation. The mass of helpless individuals who live an appropriate lifestyle with good intentions conforming to this would therefore obtain the right to be brought together very quickly.

The situation will be even more obvious as the time goes on, especially with the manifestation of natural disasters such as numerous hurricanes, eruption of live volcanoes, tornados, earthquakes, rising sea levels and other natural disasters which you will encounter.

396

Soon after your planet reaches the required stability level, it will become a land and an ocean. Our ships will then carry your people to your planet’.

NEW AGE (SPACE SOLAR FOUNDATION)

In an interview made by the publishing director of the **UFO Review** magazine T G Beckley, the **UFO** contactee Robert Short, the director of the **Space Solar Foundation** whose centre is based in California has made the following statement:

It is my opinion that Mayans were granted with such prophecies connected with the return of the ALIENS to the earth in the year 2011. However, as this date does not coincide with our present calendar, I can most certainly say that this event will take place much before this date.

I believe that towards the end of 1981, we shall witness a grand landing. This landing will be made on the Great Pyramid of Cheops and happen at the same time when new inventions take place, which proves that there are ancient astronauts in Egypt.

As far as I can tell, there will be only one great landing which will be followed by other small landings. The government presidents will not be the only ones who will be aware of this situation. Many people from every occupation living on the earth will also be aware of these landings. The landing will be in south west of United States of America. The space ship with a size of 20-30 metres in diameter will land in an open field. In it, there will be a mixed crew of members comprising from males and females representing their own civilization. The landing will take place in such a way that for the first time ever, they will explain the reason for their coming to our planet. The ALIENS visit the earth, simply because there will be so many powerful disasters in the world such as those connected with the earth's crust as well as the earthquakes, which would make changes on an extreme level in terms of the landslides on a global scale.

In order that everyone can be aware of these changes, they can use the radio, telephone and the television'.

These writings which we have extracted from the book titled **'Introduction to the Age of Knowledge / 1981-1982'** was published by a group of people who believed that **ALIENS** were being communicated as it pointed out the events, which would take place in 1980-1981.

However, let us never forget the fact that one of the chief characteristics of the **JINNS** is that they are deceitful and therefore they are liars.

They tell stories; what if these become a reality!

They tell stories; what if you believe in them!

They tell stories; what if you are being deceived and swindled!

In reality, towards the end of time as the entire **GENERATION'S DAY OF JUDGEMENT** approaches, various natural disasters would be on the increase. The earthquakes, volcanic eruptions as well as 3 big landslides and the emergence of false prophets followed by the coming of a super natural being called the Antichrist who would make people follow him but then be killed by Jesus Christ has all been informed to us some 1400 years ago by the prophet Mohammad. There are so many clear indications giving information in *hadith* books concerning the nature of these events and to date most of these has already been taken place.

As a matter of fact, there are many prophets living in this world at present. However, some of them invite people to a **SPACE RELIGION** while others invite them to a certain star or a galaxy where their **GOD** exists.

However, those who had comprehended the concept of Allah as informed by Mohammad in full would not be subject to any danger imposed on them through false prophets and the Antichrist as they can protect themselves from such deceptions easily.

So, it is unfortunate that our good willed, naïve friends, who are all willing to make a research on these matters are not fully aware of the facts relating to the religion as a whole, so they simply condition themselves by assuming that **'religion is full of superstitions'**. As a result, they can easily believe such mediums with insufficient knowledge and therefore they are being fooled by the **JINNS** and fell into their trap.

Because I do not wish to bore you with all this, I am not going into too much detail. However, if you believe in me, you shall see that there are so many absurd things going on under what the **JINNS** try to communicate to us as **ALIENS** that even our children would laugh at such ludicrous things at the first instance. They will then leave these altogether and go on playing their games as they believe doing this is an activity that is far **more pleasurable** for them.



WHAT NEEDS TO BE DONE TO BE PROTECTED

400

Detailed information concerning the reality of this subject can be found in our book titled *'DUA and ZHIKR'*.

What's more is that according to teachings of Koran, in the past, the JINNS has given great sufferings to the prophet *Ayoub* too and through his continuous recitation of the supplication that we are going to mention below, he saved himself from this ongoing oppression.

The holy chapters from Koran **'Ayat al Kursi'** (The Throne Verse) and **'Qul Auzu'** (Say: I seek refuge) provide the people the means to lift their spirits up to higher levels of consciousness so that they can easily protect themselves against the **JINNS**.

On the other hand, the supplications we are about to teach in the following lines consist of a collection of chapters found in Koran, which acts very much like a beam produced by a laser gun aimed at shooting **JINNS** and therefore forcing them to escape.

If you recite this supplication silently at the presence of those who believe in the existence of **ALIENS** and being under their powerful influence, you will then see that the **JINNS** controlling them will have no any alternative but to force them to leave from your current location. Otherwise, the person involved would be soaking wet due to amount of excess sweating, feel rather distressed and he would lose his power of articulation as he would start mumbling unnecessary words or say sentences with no meaning at all.

401

However, if the intention is to seek protection for that person who has been subject to a powerful influence, then reciting this supplication mentioned in Koran onto that person by some of his friends who are all gathered around him and reading it simultaneously for three hundred times is highly recommended. If possible, it is also advised that they should continue reciting this prayer three times every day.

If a person under such a condition reads this prayer on himself, after reading it 30 or 40 times, he could end up being very tense afterwards as he would almost feel that his body temperature is rising. He could then feel sleepy and as a result, he could leave off the beads from his hand. Or else, he could feel the need to display more violent activities. This is because he is under the influence of the **JINNS** who are sending impulses to his brain and wishing him to stop praying so that he would discontinue this act completely. If, however, the person carries on to pray, then all of these influences would decrease and that person would feel relaxed. However, it is a very good idea that reciting this supplication for a period of one month still proves very beneficial.

If however, this prayer is recited on those who are under the influence of JINNS, no matter how many times it is read, the circumstances mentioned above are never observed.

So let us make our final warning on this subject. To be able to protect oneself from JINNS, one needs to obtain extensive knowledge in this subject. Therefore, we need to attain knowledge and warn all the others around us in this manner.

* * *

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN

403



SUPPLICATION FOR PROTECTION

*Rabbi anniy massaniyyash shaiytanu binusbiyn wa adhaba.
Rabbi auwzu biqa min hamasatish shaiyateyney wa auwzu
biqa rabbi an yakhdhurun. Wa hifzan min kulli shaiytanin
maarid.*

404

(Chapters Sad: 41, Mumenoon: 97-98, Saffat: 7)

Meaning:

“The Satan has afflicted me with distress and suffering! My Lord! I seek refuge in Thee from suggestions of the evil ones. And I seek refuge in Thee, my Lord, lest they be present with me. And (there is) a safeguard against every rebellious Satan.”

* * *

◆ SPIRIT MAN JINN



GLOSSARY OF TERMS

Abdullah: Servant of *Allah*.

Abdul-Qadir Al-Jilani: The celebrated founder of the Qadiriyyah order of dervishes. He died and was buried at Baghdad, AH. 561.

406

Abd Al-Karim Al-Jili: (1365–1424). A great mystic whose writings were much influenced by Ibn al Arabi, the Spanish mystic of the 13th century. He believed that the perfect man was a channel through which the common man could enjoy contact with the Divine Being.

Abjad: When used numerically, the letters of the Arabic alphabet have a special order called the Abjad. The Abjad is an acronym referring to the first four letters in the Arabic alphabet in numerical order. It is an alphabetic writing system where there is one symbol per consonant.

Ahmad Qadiani: A Muslim religious figure born in Qadian, a small village situated in the district of Punjab in India in 1835. He is called Ahmed Qadiani, because he was born in the village of Qadian.

Akhirat: The realm of the afterlife.

Allah: This is the divine name of the Creator of the Universe and all that it contains. The word derives from “ilah”, which means “The One deserving all worship”. It truly denotes the Absolute Oneness. The name Allah has no plural and no gender. One should never use the word “God” in place of Allah. Allah is the unimaginable Supreme Being.

Allah Taala: Expression that Muslims use whenever the name *Allah* is pronounced, which means that *Allah* is exalted.

Aleyhesselaam: Literally, it means: “May Allah’s peace and blessings be upon him.” In the above text, “Hz. Mohammad Aleyhesselaam” means “May Allah’s peace and blessings be upon Mohammad.” This is an expression commonly used by Muslim people.

407

Amawis: An Islamic state, established 661—750, that introduced the religion of Islam to Europe through Spain.

Amantu: Six tenets expressed in the Koran as “Amantu billahi” which means, “I accept the commands and prohibitions of Allah.”

Anas: One of the companions of the prophet Mohammad.

Aqaeed: The Creed, Belief.

Asma Ul-Husna: The most beautiful names.

As-Sirat: The imaginary bridge set across the Hell-Fire.

Ayat al Kursi: The Verse of the Throne. Ayat al-Kursi is verse 255 of the second chapter of the Holy Koran.

Baki: The only eternal existent, ever existing ONE.

Baqā: Immortality in Deity.

Ba'su ba'd-al-Mawt: Revival after death. In Islamic terms, this is the state of restoration of life or consciousness after the death takes place.

Barzakh: Literally meaning 'obstacle', 'hindrance', 'barrier', 'partition', or 'isthmus' and more particularly in Islam the word has come to mean the intermediate area between heaven and hell, or the place or state between this earthly life and the life in the hereafter.

Beykoz: A small district in the city of Istanbul.

408

Dajjal: An evil figure who will appear some time before the Last Day. He is a counterpart to the Antichrist prophesied by Christianity. He will deceive the faithful, teaching them that Heaven is Hell and vice versa. He will have the power to work miracles in order to mislead believers.

Déjà Vu: The term *déjà vu* comes from the French and means, literally, "already seen." It is an uncanny feeling or illusion of having already seen or experienced something that is being experienced for the first time. Those who have experienced the feeling describe it as an overwhelming sense of familiarity with something that shouldn't be familiar at all.

Diogenes, Romanos: The Roman (Byzantine) emperor who is defeated by the *Seljuq Turks* at the Battle of Mantzikert, a city in eastern Turkey's, now known as Malazgirt in 1071.

Ecmnesia: Loss of memory for recent events or the loss of memory with regard to the events of a particular period.

Fakirism: Hindu Yogism. This is the practice of wonder-working.

Fatwa: This term refers to the rulings issued on a matter that has no straightforward verdict in Islamic sources. To give such a ruling, a person should be well-versed in Islamic disciplines, particularly the *Koran* and the *Sunnah*.

Fusus al-Hikam: The Wisdom of the Prophets.

Futuhut al-Makkiyya: Meccan Revelations.

409

Ghaus: Literally, one to whom we can cry for help, advanced spiritual soul.

Hadith: Reports on the sayings and teachings of Prophet *Mohammad* (Peace and blessings be upon him) or what he witnessed and approved.

Halaal: An Arabic word, which means permissible in Islam.

Haqq: The Divine Truth. This is a word of immense significance in the intellectual and linguistic development of Islam. Haqq can be both a noun and an adjective, meaning 'Truth' and 'Rightness' and also 'True', 'Right' and 'Correct'. However, it also has a more technical sense as an attribute and name of *Allah*.

Haraam: An Arabic word, which means prohibited in Islam.

Hazrat Ali (A.S): The Fourth Caliph of Islam and the Holy Prophet Mohammad's (Peace and blessings be upon him)

cousin. After marrying Fatima, he became his son-in-law as well.

Hazrat Isa (A.S.): The Prophet Jesus (Peace and blessings be upon him).

Hazrat Omar (A.S.): The second Caliph of Islam (Peace and blessings be upon him).

Hazrat Khalid: One of the companions of Hz. Mohammad known as Eyyub Sultan whose grave is in a district called Eyüp in Istanbul.

Hejrah: This means the (migration) of the Prophet and his apostles from (Mecca) to (Al-Medina). From this year of migration on started the Islamic year and the Arabic calendar Lunar year.

Hodja: A religious mentor. A devout Muslim man respected for his knowledge of Islam and who may perform a specific duty within an Islamic community; teacher.

H: Venerable.

Ibn-Al Abbas: A Companion of the prophet Mohammad, one of the greatest scholars of early Islam.

Ibn Majah: A medieval scholar of hadith (the sayings of Mohammad). He compiled the last of Sunni Islam's six canonical hadith collections, Sunan Ibn Maja.

Ibn Masood: A Companion of the prophet Mohammad, one of the greatest scholars of early Islam.

Ibn Khaldun: (1332-1406), one of the strongest personalities of Arab-Muslim culture in the period of its decline. He is generally regarded as a historian, sociologist and philosopher.

Ibn Omar: One of the companions of the prophet Mohammad.

Imam Abu'l-Hasan al-Ash'ari: (260-324), an Islamic scholar whose doctrines he abandoned in his fortieth year after failing to resolve the issue of the supposed divine obligation to abandon the good for the sake of the better.

Imam Al-Ghazali: (450/1058-505/1111) - One of Islam's greatest theologians, a major Sufi and an outstanding scholar of Islamic Philosophy, though by no means an original philosopher. He came to hold the belief that he would be the Renewer of Islam for the New Islamic century.

411 **Imam Al Rabbani:** Ahmad Sirhindi, the great seventeenth century Indian Sufi and religious reformer.

Insan el-Kamil: The Universal Man.

Insha'allah: An expression meaning 'If God Wills'. This is a very common Muslim expression, the equivalent of the Latin Deo Volente.

Isa Aleyhesselaam: The Prophet Jesus. May Allah's peace be upon him.

Jinn: Intelligent, often invisible, spiritual beings made from smokeless flame of fire. The jinn also have the ability to assume various kinds of perceptible forms. They are mentioned in the Koran and, like man, some will be saved and go to Paradise since there are good as well as bad jinn, and jinn who help men as well as those who hinder and harm as they meddle in the lives of men.

Kashf: The literal meaning of the word kashf is "unveiling," but in Sufi terminology it means to expose the heart to metaphysical illumination or "revelation" unattainable by reason.

Khalq: An Arabic verb, which refers to the Creation of the human being.

Koran-Al Karim: The Holy Muslim Book.

Kufr: Literally means 'to cover' or 'to conceal'. This is the act of disbelieving in the Koran or in any of the tenets of the Muslim religion.

412

Mahdi: The Arabic term meaning the 'divinely guided one'. This is the Saviour figure in Islam. The main principle of the *Mahdi* is that he is a figure that is absolutely guided by *Allah*.

Marifatname: Book of Gnosis. This is a book written by the Islamic scholar and Sufi Ibrahim Hakki Erzurumi (1703-1780).

Mawlana Jalaluddin Rumi: (1207- 1273) One of the great spiritual masters and poetical geniuses of mankind and was the founder of the *Mawlawi* Sufi order. Sufi poet whose message embraced all humanity as personified by his message, 'Come, whoever you are, come...'

Mirza Ghulam Ahmad Qadian: A Muslim religious figure born in Qadian, a small village situated in the district of Punjab in India in 1835. He is the founder of the Ahmadiyya religious movement in Islam. Mirza Ghulam Ahmad remains a controversial figure to this day because of his claims to be the Promised Messiah and *Mahdi*, as well as the movement he established.

Mesons: Mesons are intermediate mass particles, which are made up of a quark-anti-quark pair.

Muhyiddin Ibn 'Arabi: A mystic and prominent theologian who lived from 1165 to 1240 C.E. Andalusian by origin, he travelled in the West and the East and has become known in Sufi circles as Sheikh Al-Akbar (the Greatest Master). His spiritual attainments were evident from an early age and he was renowned for his great visionary capacity as well as being a superlative teacher.

Mujaddid: Reformer in Islam.

413

Mujtahid: A scholar of Islam qualified to issue expert Islamic legal opinions out of the chapters of the Koran and the *hadiths*. A *mujtahid* is a person who is an expert of Islamic jurisprudence.

Munkaar and Nakeer: They are the two angels in charge of questioning the faith of the dead person in their graves.

Mursheed: Spiritual Master.

Nabi: Nabi is a messenger of *Allah* who delivers a new scripture, while 'Rasool' is a messenger commissioned by *Allah* to confirm existing scripture; he does not bring a new scripture. According to the Koran, every 'Nabi' is a 'Rasool' but not every 'Rasool' is a 'Nabi.' In the translation of this book, the word Nabi is used to refer to the messenger of *Allah* and it is not the same word as the 'prophet'.

Nafs: This word lexically means the soul, the psyche, the ego, the inner self of a person.

Nafs of Ammarah: The Commanding Soul. An expression used in the Holy Koran for the lowest stage in the spiritual growth of man, the stage when the low desires and animal passions rule the mind of man and he succumbs to his carnal desires like a brute.

Nafs al Safiyyah: This is the state of a soul reaching the purity of perfect harmony

Namaz: Muslim ritual prayers practiced 5 times a day.

Nur: The Light.

Nutfah: The drop of a fluid, in the above holy verse it means the sperm drop.

414

Paul Langevin: (1872-1946), French physicist.

Qadar: Divine Pre-ordainment. Qadar means pre-determination or *Allah's* plan according to His measure.

Quant: This is the plural form of quantum. It is the branch of mechanics that deals with the mathematical description of the motion and interaction of subatomic particles. It is also the basic units of every entity in our universe.

Qul Auzu: This is a phrase in Arabic mentioned in the beginning of last two chapters of Koran, which means 'Say: I seek refuge'.

Qutub-ul-Aqtaab: Those considered being the spiritual axes of the universe. Al-Aqtaab is the plural form of qutub, which means axis or pivot: the highest station in the Sufi hierarchy of saints.

Qutub-ul-Irshad: Pole of Enlightenment; the chief masters who are responsible for guiding and enlightening the people of the world.

Rabb: A dimension of consciousness possessing countless attributes within its own essence. A person's *Rabb* is the composition of all the attributes belonging to that person's essence, which produce the person's existence.

Radiallahu anhu: An expression used by Muslims to mean 'May Allah be pleased with him'.

415

Rasool: Messenger or 'Apostle' of *Allah*.

Rejal-ul-Ghaib: Perfect spiritual men of the unknown.

Riazat: The efforts spent for good conduct in the way of *Allah*.

Rouh-UI-Azam: The Supreme Spirit.

Rouh-UI-Hayvane: The Animal Spirit.

Rouh-UI-Kudus: The Holy Spirit.

Rouh-UI-Nurani: The Light Spirit.

Rouh-UI-Haqiqah: The Truth of the Spirit.

Rouh-UI-Seyrane: The Wandering Spirit.

Sheikh: Religious mentor.

Sirat-ul Mustaqim: The straight path.

Tanasukh: The doctrine of reincarnation, transmigration of souls.

Tayy al-makan: The folding of space. This is the term used to express the process of traversing long distances in a short moment of time performed by people of wisdom.

Tawheed: The absolute oneness of *Allah*.

Ululhiyyah: Divinity. This is the state of being the only True God.

Wahdat al-wujud: Unity of existence. A term used by some Sufis, which means that Existent is One; creatures are the appearance of Allah.

Zhikr: Remembrance of *Allah*.

* * *